



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

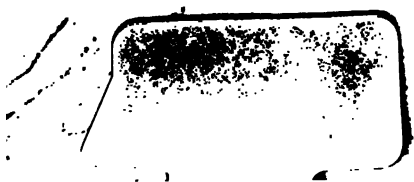
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

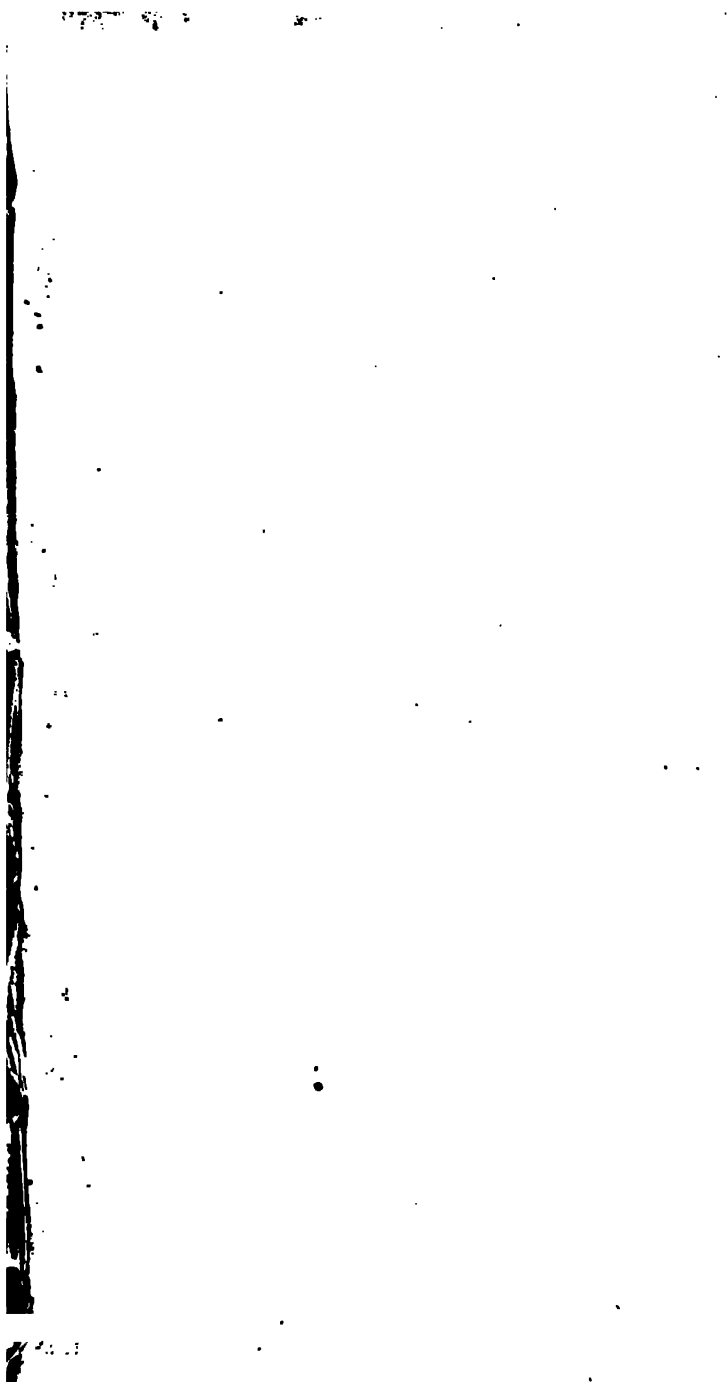
About Google Book Search

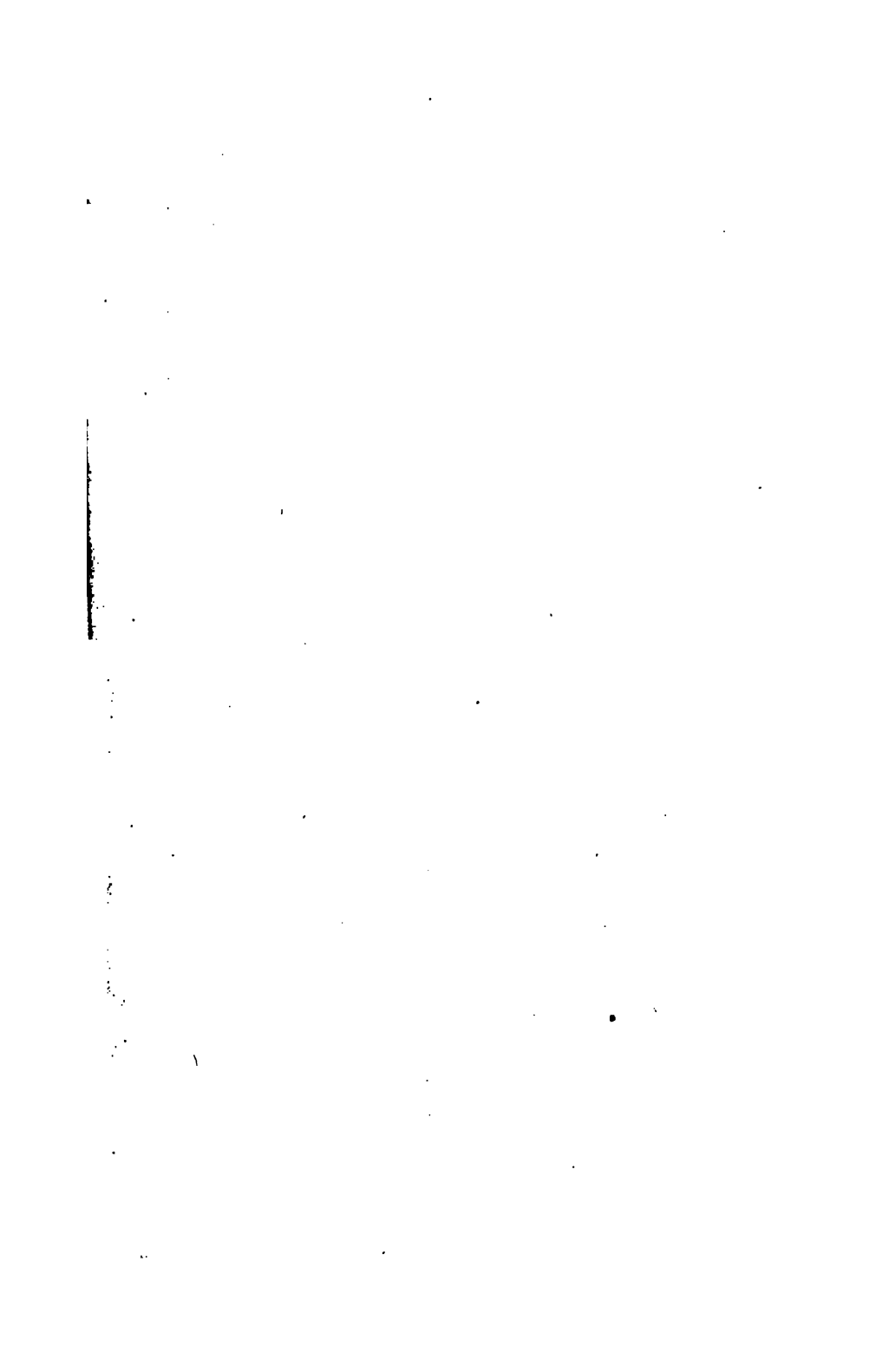
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



11/11/50







THE
HISTORY
OF OUR
SAVIOUR,
JESUS CHRIST;

Containing,
In Order of Time, all the EVENTS and
DISCOURSES Recorded in the *Four*
Evangelists, &c.

WITH
Some Short NOTES for the Help of Ordinary
READERS.

By Mr. JOHN LOCKE.

L O N D O N :

Printed for W. MEARS and F. CLAY without
Temple-Bar, and J. HOOKE and T. WOOD-
WARD in *Fleetstreet*. 1721.



Advertisement.

IT has been judg'd by several, that a continu'd History of our Blessed Saviour in order of Time, wholly in the Words of the Scripture, would be of greater use to the more ordinary sort of Readers, than Harmonies of the Evangelists. Because that those who are not very conversant in Books, are rather confounded, than help'd, by the several Columns and Breaks, which are necessary in such a Work.

Such a History as here abovemention'd, the Reader will find in the following Sheets; divided only into Sections, according to the different Passages, and Acts, of our Saviour.

The Evangelist, Chapter, and Verse, out of which the History is transcrib'd; is noted all along in the outward Margin. And whenever there is occasion to change from one Evangelist to another, there is a Star [*] put to shew where the change comes in; and the Evangelist, Chapter and Verse, is set over against that Verse in the outward Margin.

When the same Fact, or any Circumstances concerning our Saviour, is related by more than one, or all the Four Evangelists; if any have a mind to turn to their Bibles, to see how the same things are express'd by the other Evangelists, they are refer'd by a small Letter as ['] ['] &c. to the inward Margin, where they will find the Evangelist, Chapter, and Verse noted.

The

The Age of our Saviour, and Year of his Ministry, is express'd all along at the top of the inward Margin; and the place of action (as far as it could be known) is set always in the outward Margin.

There is also here and there, Notes, for the Explanation of some Words, and Customs, as for Example in Sect. II. Course of Abia.

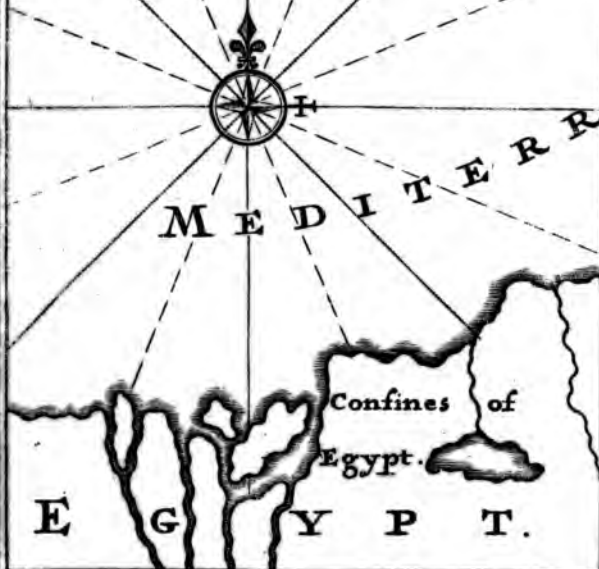
There is annex'd a Map of the Countrys through which our Saviour travell'd; and the Places, and Towns are named the same as in the Gospels.

It has been necessary sometimes the better to join the Sense to add a Word, as [and] [he] and such like, but the Reader will see it makes no alteration as to the true meaning of those places, and that he may the more readily observe it, those Words are always put between two Hooks, and in the Italick Character.

THE



The Places in the
HOLY LAND
mentioned in y^e GOSPELL



THE HISTORY

Of our Saviour

JESUS CHRIST,

Related in the

Words of the Scriptures.

SECT. I.

INTRODUCTION.

FOrasmuch as many have taken Luke i.
in hand to set forth in order a
declaration of those things
which are most surely believed
amongst us, even as they deliver'd them 2.
unto us, which from the beginning were
Eye-witnesses and Ministers of the word.
It seemed good to me also, having had 3.
perfect understanding of all things from
the very first, to write unto thee in order,
most excellent Theophilus, that thou 4.
mightest know the certainty of those
things wherein thou hast been instructed.

B SECT.

Temple.
Luke i.

S E C T. II.

*The conception of John the Baptist
foretold by an Angel.*

5. **T**Here was in the days of Herod the King of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the (a) course of Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.
6. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and
7. ordinances of the Lord, blameless. And they had no child, because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in Years.
8. And it came to pass, that while he executed the Priest's office before God in
9. order of his course, according to the custom of the Priest's office, his lott was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.
10. And the whole multitude of people were praying without at the time of
11. incense, and there appeared unto him an Angel of the Lord standing on the right
12. side of the altar of incense. And when Zacharias saw him he was troubled,
13. and fear fell upon him. But the Angel said unto him, *Fear not, Zacharias, for*

(a) *Course of Abia.* There were 24 Courses of the Priests which officiated in their turns, whereof that of *Abiah* was the eighth. How the distribution was made, and what were the name and order of each may be seen 1 *Chron.* xxiv.

thy

thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Eliza- Temple.
beth shall bear thee a Son; and thou shalt Luke i:
call his name John. And thou shalt have 14:
joy and gladness, and many shall rejoyce
at his Birth: For he shall be great in 15:
the sight of the Lord; and shall drink
neither wine nor strong drink; and he
shall be filled with the Holy Ghost; even
from his mothers womb; and many of 16:
the children of Israel shall be turn to
the Lord their God; and he shall go be- 17:
fore him in the spirit and power of Elias,
to turn the hearts of the fathers to the
children; and the disobedient to the
wisdom of the just, to make ready a peo-
ple prepared for the Lord.

And Zacharias said unto the Angel, 18:
whereby shall I know this? For I am an
old Man, and my wife well stricken in
years.

And the Angel answering said unto 19:
him, I am Gabriel that stand in the pre-
sence of God, and am sent to speak un-
to thee, and to shew thee these glad ti-
dings. And behold thou shalt be dumb, 20:
and not able to speak, until the day that
these things shall be performed, because
thou believest not my words, which shall
be fulfilled in their season.

And the people waited for Zacharias, 21:
and marvelled that he tarried so long
in the Temple, and when he came out, 22:
he could not speak unto them: and they
perceived that he had seen a vision in
the Temple: for he beckned unto them;
and remained speechless.

Temple.
Luke i.

- And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.
 23. And after those days his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid herself five months,
 24. saying, thus hath the Lord dealt with me, to take away my reproach among men.
 25.

S E C T. III.

Nazareth.

The conception and birth of Christ declared to Mary by the Angel.

26. **A**ND in the sixth month; [*of Elizabeth's being with Child*] the Angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a
 27. City of Galilee, named Nazareth. To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David, and
 28. the virgins name was Mary. And the Angel came in unto her, and said; *Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee : blessed art thou among women.*
 29. And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.
 30. And the Angel said unto her, *Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour with*
 31. *God. And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a Son, and*
 32. *shalt call his Name Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest ; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.*
 33. *And he shall reign over the house of Jacob*

cob for ever, and of his kingdom there Nazareth. shall be no end. Luke i.

Then said Mary unto the Angel, *How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?*

And the Angel answered, and said unto her, *The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Higbest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God; and behold thy Cousen Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a Son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called Barren; For with God nothing shall be impossible.*

And Mary said, *Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word.* And the Angel departed from her.

SECT. IV.

The Salutation of Mary and Elizabeth. The hill country of Judea.

AND Mary arose in those Days, and went into the hill Country with haste, into a City of Juda, and entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth. And it came to pass that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost, and she spake out with a loud voice, and said, "Blessed art thou among Women, and blessed is the fruit

The hill coun-
try of Judea.
Luke 1.

“ of thy womb; and whence is this to
“ me, that the mother of my Lord should
“ come to me? For lo, as soon as the voice
43. “ of thy salutation sounded in mine ears,
44. “ the babe leaped in my womb for joy;
45. “ and blessed is she that believed: for
“ there shall be a performance of those
“ things which were told her from the
“ Lord.

46. “ And Mary said, “ My soul doth mag-
47. “ nifie the Lord, and my spirit hath re-
48. “ joyced in God my Saviour. For he
“ hath regarded the low estate of his
“ handmaiden: for behold from hence-
“ forth all generations shall call me blef-
49. “ sed. For he that is mighty hath done
“ to me great things, and holy is his Name,
50. “ And his mercy is on them that fear
“ him, from generation to generation.
51. “ He hath shew’d strength with his arm,
“ he hath scattered the proud in the ima-
52. “ gination of their hearts. He hath put
“ down the mighty from their seats,
53. “ and exalted them of low degree. He
“ hath filled the hungry with good things,
“ and the rich he hath sent empty away.
54. “ He hath holpen his servant Israel, in re-
55. “ membrance of his mercy; As he spake
“ to our Fathers, to Abraham and to his
“ seed for ever.

56. “ And Mary abode with her about
three months, and returned to her own
house.

The hill country of Judea.
Luke i.

SECT. V.

The birth of John the baptist.

NOW Elizabeth's full time came, that she should be deliver'd; and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours, and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her, and they rejoiced with her. And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. And his mother answered and said, *Not so, but he shall be called John.* And they said unto her, *There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.* And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. And he asked for a writing table and wrote, saying, *His name is John.* And they marvelled all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake and praised God, and fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judea. And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, *What manner of Child shall this be?* And the hand of the Lord was with him.

And his Father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied saying "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his

The hill coun-
try of Judea,
Luke i.

- “ people, and hath raised up an horn of
“ salvation for us in the house of his ser-
“ vant David; as he spake by the mouth
70. “ of his holy prophets, which have been
“ since the world began; That we should
71. “ be saved from our enemies, and from
“ the hand of all that hate us. To per-
72. “ form the mercy *promised* to our fa-
“ thers, and to remember his holy co-
“ venant, The oath which he sware to
73. “ our Father Abraham, that he would
74. “ grant unto us, that we, being delive-
“ red out of the hands of our enemies;
75. “ might serve him without fear, in ho-
“ lineſs and righteousneſs before him
76. “ all the days of our life. And thou
“ child ſhalt be called the prophet of
“ the Higheſt: for thou ſhalt go before
“ the face of the Lord to prepare his
“ ways; to give knowledge of ſalvation
77. “ unto his people, by the remiſſion of
“ their ſins, through the tender mercy
78. “ of our God; whereby the day-ſpring
“ from on high hath viſited us, to give
79. “ light to them that ſit in darkneſs, and
“ in the ſhadow of death, to guide our
“ feet into the way of peace.

80. “ And the child grew, and waxed ſtrong
“ in ſpirit, and was in the deſerts till the
“ day of his ſhewing unto Iſrael.

Anno
Ætat. I.

SECT. VI.

The birth of Christ.

Bethlehem.

NOW the birth of Jesus Christ was 18. Mat. i.
on this wife.

When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband being 19.
(a) a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought 20.
on these things, behold the Angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, *Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy Wife; for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth 21.*
a son, and thou shalt call his name (b) Jesus: for he shall save his People from their Sins. (Now all this was done that 22.
it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet [Isai. VII. 14.] saying, *Behold a virgin shall be with 23.*
child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is *God with us.*)

Then Joseph being raised from sleep 24.
did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took *unto him* his wife: And 25.

- (a) *Just* in Hebrew is put for *gentle* and *benign*.
(b) *Jesus* signifies *Saviour*.

knew

Bethlehem. knew her not till she had brought forth Anno 1,
Mat. i. her first born Son; and he called his name **Æt. i.**
 Jesus.

- Luke ii.** 1. And it came to pass in those days,
 that there went out a decree from
 (c) *Cesar Augustus*, that all the world
 2. should be taxed. (And this taxing was
 first made when Cyrenius was governour
 3. of Syria) And all went to be taxed eve-
 4. ry one into his own City. And Joseph
 also went up from Galilee out of the
 City of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the
 City of David, which is called Bethle-
 hem, (because he was of the house and
 5. lineage of David) to be taxed with Ma-
 ry his espoused wife, being great with
 6. child. And so it was, that while they
 were there, the days were accomplished
 7. that she should be delivered. And she
 brought forth her first born son, and
 wrapped him in swadling cloaths, and
 laid him in a manger, because there was
 no room for them in the inn.
 8. And there were in the same country
 shepherds abiding in the field, keeping
 9. watch over their flock by night. And lo,
 the Angel of the Lord came upon them,
 and the glory of the Lord shone round
 about them, and they were sore afraid.
 10. And the Angel said unto them, *Fear not,*
for behold I bring you good tidings of
great joy, which shall be to all people,
 11. *For unto you is born this day, in the*

(c) *Cesar Augustus* was Emperour of Rome, and
 to him Judea was tributary.

(d) *City*

Anno (d) *City of David, a Saviour, which is* Bethlehem.
 Etat. I. (e) *Christ the Lord. And this shall be a* Luke ii.
sign unto you; ye shall find the babe 12.
wrapped in swadling cloaths lying in a
manger.

And suddenly there was with the An- 13.
 gel a multitude of the heavenly host prai-
 sing God, and saying, *Glory to God in* 14.
the highest, and on earth peace, good
will towards men.

And it came to pass, as the Angels 15.
 were gone away from them into heaven,
 the shepherds said one to another, *Let us*
now go even unto Bethlehem, and see
this thing which is come to pass, which the
Lord hath made known unto us. And 16.
 they came with haste, and found Mary
 and Joseph, and the babe lying in a man-
 ger. And when they had seen it, they 17.
 made known abroad the saying which was
 told them concerning this child. And all 18.
 they that heard it, wondred at those
 things which were told them by the she-
 pherds. But Mary kept all these things 19.
 and pondered them in her heart.

And the shepherds returned, glorify- 20.
 ing and praising God, for all the things
 that they had heard and seen, as it was
 told unto them.

(d) *City of David, that is Bethlehem.*
 (e) *Christ in Greek is the same which Messiah*
in Hebrew. See S. 19.

S E C T. VII.

Christ's Genealogy.

- Mat. i. **T**HE book of the generation of Jesus Christ
1. the son of David,
 2. the son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac, Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and
 3. his brethren, and Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and Phares begat Esrom, and
 4. Esrom begat Aram, and Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson
 5. begat Salmon, and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse,
 6. and Jesse begat David the King, and David the King begat Salomon of her *that had been the Wife* of
 7. Urias, and Salomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and
 8. Abia begat Asa, and Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram be-
gat
- Luk. iii. *being* (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was *the son* of
23. Heli, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Janna, which was *the son* of Joseph,
 24. which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, which was *the*
 25. *son* of Nagge, which was *the son* of Maath, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the*
 26. *son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rhesa, which was *the son* of Zorobabel, which was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the*
 27. *son*

gat Ozias, and Ozias ^{Mat. i.} 9.
 begat Joatham, and
 Joatham begat Achaz,
 and Achaz begat Eze-
 chias, and Ezekias be-
 gat Manasses, and ^{10.}
 Manasses begat A-
 mon, and Amon begat
 Josias, and Josias be- ^{11.}
 gat Jechonias and his
 brethren about the
 time they were carri-
 ed away to Babylon.
 And after they were ^{12.}
 brought to Babylon
 Jeconias begat Sala-
 thiel, and Salathiel
 begat Zorobabel, and ^{13.}
 Zorobabel begat Abi-
 ud, and Abiud begat
 Eliakim, and Eliakim
 begat Azor, and Azor ^{14.}
 begat Sadoc, and Sa-
 doc begat Achim, and
 Achim begat Eliud,
 and Eliud begat Elea- ^{15.}
 zar, and Eleazar be-
 gat Matthan and Mat-
 than begat Jacob, and ^{16.}
 Jacob begat Joseph.

*the son of Neri, which ^{Luk. iii.}
 was the son of Mel- ^{28.}
 chi, which was the
 son of Addi, which
 was the son of Cosam,
 which was the son of
 Elmodam, which was
 the son of Er, which ^{29.}
 was the son of Jose,
 which was the son of
 Eliezer, which was
 the son of Jorim,
 which was the son of
 Matthat, which was
 the son of Levi, which ^{30.}
 was the son of Simeon,
 which was the son of
 Juda, which was the
 son of Joseph, which
 was the son of Jonan,
 which was the son of
 Eliakim, which was ^{31.}
 the son of Melea,
 which was the son of
 Menan, which was
 the son of Mattatha,
 which was the son of
 Nathan, which was
 the son of David,
 which was the son of ^{32.}
 Jesse, which was the
 son of Obed, which
 was the son of Booz,
 which was the son of
 Salmon, which was
 the son of Naasson,
 which*

- Luk. iii. which was *the son of*
33. Aminadab, which was
the son of Aram, which
was the son of Esrom,
which was the son of
Phares, which was the
34. *son of Judah, which*
was the son of Jacob,
which was the son of
Isaac, which was the
son of Abraham,
which was the son of
Thara, which was the
35. *son of Nachor, which*
was the son of Saruch,
which was the son of
Ragau, which was the
son of Phalec, which
was the son of Heber,
which was the son of
36. *Sala, which was the*
son of Cainan, which
was the son of Ar-
phaxad, which was
the son of Sem, which
was the son of Noe,
which was the son of
37. *Lamech, which was*
the son of Mathusala,
which was the son of
Enoch, which was the
son of Jared, which
was the son of Male-
leel, which was the
38. *son of Cainan, which*
was the son of Enos,
which

anno
Etat. i.

which was *the son* of Bethlehem.
Seth, which was *the* Mat. i.
son of Adam, which
was *the son* of God.

the husband of Mary, of whom was born ¹⁶.
Jesus, who is called Christ.

So all the generations from Abraham ¹⁷.
to David *are* fourteen generations: and
from David until the carrying away
into Babylon, are fourteen generations:
and from the carrying away into Baby-
lon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

S E C T. VIII.

Christ circumcised.

AND when eight days were accom- Luk. ii.
plished for the circumcising of the ²¹.
Child, his name was called Jesus, which
was so named of the Angel before he was
conceived in the womb.

S E C T. IX.

*The coming and departure of the
wise men.*

NOW when Jesus was born in *Bethle-* 1. Mat. ii.
hem of *Judea* in the days of *He-*
rod the King, behold there came wise
men from the East to *Jerusalem*, say-
ing, *Where is he that is born King of the* 2.
Jews? For we have seen his star in
the East, and are come to worship him.
When

- Ecchlehem. When *Herod* the King had heard *these* Anno.
 Mat. ii. things he was troubled, and all *Jerusa-* Ætat. i.
 3. *lem* with him, and when he had gather-
 4. ed all the chief Priests and Scribes of
 the people together, he demanded of
 5. them *where Christ should be born.* And
 they said unto him *in Bethlehem of Ju-*
 6. *dea:* for thus it is written by the Pro-
 phet [*Micah V. 2.*] *And thou Bethlehem*
in the land of Juda, art not the least a-
mong the Princes of Juda; for out of
thee shall come a Governour that shall
rule my people Israel.
 7. Then *Herod* when he had privily
 call'd the wise men, enquired of them
 diligently what time the star appear'd.
 8. And he sent them to *Bethlehem*, and
 said, *Go and search diligently for the*
 9. *young child; and when ye have found*
him bring me word again, that I may
come and worship him also. When they
 had heard the King, they departed; and
 10. lo, the star which they saw in the east,
 went before them, till it came and stood
 over where the young child was. When
 11. they saw the star they rejoiced with ex-
 ceeding great joy. And when they were
 come into the house, they saw the young
 child with *Mary* his mother, and fell
 down, and worshipped him: and when
 they had opened their treasures, they pre-
 sented unto him gifts; gold and frank-
 12. incense, and myrrh. And being warn-
 ed of God in a dream that they should
 not return to *Herod*, they departed into
 their own country another way.

SECT.

10.
26. 1.

Temple.
Luk. ii.

S E C T. X.

The presenting of Christ in the Temple.

AND when the days of [*Mary's*] pu- 22.
rification, according to the Law of
Moses, were accomplished, they brought
[*Jesus*] to Jerusalem to present him to
the Lord, (as it is written in the Law of 23.
the Lord, *Every male that openeth the
womb shall be called holy to the Lord*)
and to offer a sacrifice according to that 24.
which is said in the Law of the Lord,
*a pair of turtle doves or two young pi-
geons*. And behold there was a man in 25.
Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and
the same man was just and devout, wait-
ing for the consolation of Israel: and
the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it 26.
was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost,
that he should not see death, before he
had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came 27.
by the Spirit into the Temple: and when
the Parents brought in the Child Jesus,
to do for him after the custom of the
Law, then took he him up in his arms 28.
and blessed God and said,

" Lord, now lettest thou thy servant 29.
depart in peace according to thy word.
" For mine eyes have seen thy Salva- 30.
tion: which thou hast prepared be- 31.
fore the face of all people. A light 32.
" to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory
" of thy people Israel.

C

And

Temple.
Luke ii.

- And Joseph and his Mother marvelled Anno
 33. at those things which were spoken of him. Ætat. 1.
 34. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto
Mary his Mother, Behold this child is
set for the fall and rising again of ma-
ny in Israel; and for a sign which shall
 35. *be spoken against: (yea a sword shall*
peirce thro' thine own soul also) that
the thoughts of many hearts may be re-
vealed.
 36. And there was one Anna a prophetess,
 the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of
 Aser; she was of a great age, and had
 lived with an husband seven years from
 37. her virginity: and she was a widow of
 about fourscore and four years: which
 departed not from the temple, but served
 God with fastings and prayers night and
 38. day; and she coming in at that instant
 gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and
 spake of him to all them that looked
 for redemption in Jerusalem.

S E C T. XI.

Egypt.

Joseph's flight with Christ into Egypt.

Mat. ii.

13. **A**ND when the [*wise men*] were de-
 parted, behold the Angel of the
 Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, say-
 ing, *Arise, and take the young child and*
his mother, and flee into Egypt, and
be thou there until I bring thee word:
 14. *for Herod will seek the young child to de-*
stroy him. When he arose, he took the
 young child and his mother by night,
 and

no and departed into Egypt, and was there Egypt.
at. 2. until the death of Herod: that it might ^{15. Mat. ii.}
be fulfilled which was spoken of the
Lord by the Prophet [*Hosea xi. 1.*] say-
ing, *out of Egypt have I called my Son.*

S E C T. XII.

Slaughter of the Infants at Bethlehem. ^{Bethlehem.}

THen Herod when he saw that he was ^{16.}
mocked of the wise men, was ex-
ceeding wrath, and sent forth, and slew
all the children that were in Bethlehem,
and in all the coasts thereof from two
years old and under, according to the
time which he had diligently enquired of
the wise men. Then was fulfilled that ^{17.}
which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet,
[*xxxi. 15.*] saying, *In Rama was there a* ^{18.}
voice heard, lamentation, and weeping,
and great mourning, Rachel weeping for
her children and would not be comfort-
ed because they are not.

S E C T. XIII.

Return of Joseph from Egypt. ^{Galilee}

BUT when Herod was dead, behold, ^{19.}
an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a
dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, *Arise,* ^{20.}
and take the young child and his mother
and go into the Land of Israel, for they
are dead which sought the young child's
life. And he arose, and took the young ^{21.}

- Galilee. child and his mother, and came into the Anno
 Mat. iii. 22. land of Israel. But when he heard that ^{Æt. 12.}
 Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room
 of his father Herod, he was afraid to go
 thither: notwithstanding, being warned
 of God in a dream, he turned aside in-
 23. to the parts of Galilee: And he came and
 Luk. ii. 39. dwelt in a city called Nazareth, [^{Luk. ii. 35} ha-
 ving] performed all things according to
 the Law of the Lord, * that it might be
 Mar. ii. 23. fulfilled which was spoken by the pro-
 phets, *He shall be called a Nazarene.*

S E C T. XIV.

Nazareth.

Christ's stay at Jerusalem.

- Luk. ii. 40. **A**ND the Child grew, and waxed
 strong in Spirit, filled with wis-
 dom; and the grace of God was upon
 him.
 41. Now his parents went to Jerusalem
 every year at the feast of the passover.
 42. And when he was twelve years old, they
 went up to Jerusalem after the custom
 43. of the feast. And when they had ful-
 filled the days, as they returned, the
 Child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem;
 and Joseph and his mother knew not of
 44. it. But they supposing him to have been
 in the company, went a days journey,
 and they sought him among *their* kinf-
 45. folk and acquaintance. And when they
 found him not, they turned back again
 46. to Jerusalem seeking him. And it came
 to pass, that after three days they found
 him

10 him in the Temple, sitting in the midst Jerusalem.
 at. 29. of the Doctors, both hearing them, and Luk. ii.
 asking them questions. And all that 47.
 heard him were astonished at his under-
 standing and answers. And when they 48.
 saw him they were amazed: and his mo-
 ther said unto him, *Son, why hast thou*
thus dealt with us? behold thy father
and I have sought thee sorrowing. And 49.
 he said unto them, *How is it that ye*
sought me? wist ye not that I must be a-
bout my Father's business: And they un- 50.
 derstood not the saying which he spake
 unto them. And he went down with 51.
 them, and came to Nazareth, and was Nazareth.
 subject unto them. But his mother kept
 all these sayings in her heart. And Jesus 52.
 increased in wisdom and stature, and
 in favour with God and man,

S E C T. XV.

The preaching of John the Baptist,

THE beginning of the (a) Gospel of Mar. i.
 Jesus the Son of God. † Now Luk. iii.
 in the fifteenth year of the reign of
 (b) Tiberius Cesar, (c) Pontius Pilate be-
 ing governour of Judea, and (d) Herod

(a) Gospel is an old English word for good ti-
 dings.

(b) Tiberius Cesar was Emperour of Rome and
 successor to Augustus,

(c) Pontius Pilate being Governour of Judea under
 Tiberius.

(d) Herod. The son of that Herod the King who
 is mention'd in §. 13.

- Wilderness of being (e) Tetrarch of (f) Galilee and Anno
Judea. his brother Philip Tetrarch of (g) Iturea, *Ætat.* 29.
Luk. iii. and of the region of Trachonitis, and
Lysanias the Tetrarch of (h) Abilene,
2. Annas and Caiphas being the high priests,
the word of God came unto John the
son of Zacharias in the (i) wilderness,
Mar. i. 4. * [and he] did baptize* in the wilderness, *Mar. iii. 1
Luk. iii. 3. * and he came into all the country about Mar. i. 1.
Jordan, preaching the baptism of re-
pentance for the remission of sins, * and
Mat. iii. 2. saying, Repent ye, for the kingdom of
3. heaven is at hand. ^b For this is he ^bMar. iii. 3
that was spoken of by the Prophets, Luk. iii. 4.
Mar. i. 2. [Malachi iii. 1.] * saying behold I send
my messenger before thy face which shall
prepare thy way before thee [and by E-
3. saias xl. 3.] The voice of one crying in
the wilderness, prepare ye the way of the
5. Lord, make his paths straight. * Every
valley shall be filled, and every mountain
and hill shall be brought low; and the
crooked shall be made straight, and the
rough ways shall be made smooth; and
all flesh shall see the salvation of God.
Mat. iii. 4. * And the same John had his raiment *Mar. i. 6. 5

(e) Tetrarch here is equivalent to King.

(f) Galilee the northern part of the Land of Canaan.

(g) Iturea and the region of Trachonitis, part of the Land of Canaan lying north-east of Galilee and the sea of Tiberias.

(h) Abilene, a little country lying on the skirts of Canaan north-eastward.

(i) Wilderness signifies the country where the houses stand scattered and at a distance one from another. See ii. Cor. xi. 26.

of

no of Camels hair and a leathern girdle about Wilderness of
 tat. 29. his loins, and his meat was locusts and Judea.
 wild honey. Then went out to him Je- Mat. iii.
 rusalem, and all Judea, and all the region 5.
 round about Jordan, and were baptized 6.
 of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. Jordan.

uk.iii.7. ^a But when he saw many of the (k) Pha- 7.
 risees and (l) Sadducees come to his Bap-
 tism, he said unto them, *O generation of*
vipers, who hath warned you to flee from
the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore 8. Mat. iii.
fruits meet for repentance. And think 9.
not to say within your selves, we have
Abraham to our Father; for I say unto
you, that God is able of these stones to
raise up children unto Abraham. And 10.
now also the ax is laid unto the root of
the trees: therefore every tree which
bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn
down and cast into the fire.

And the people asked him, saying, 10. Luk. iii.
what shall we do then?

He answereth and saith unto them, He 11.
that hath two coats, let him impart to
him that hath none, and he that hath
meat, let him do likewise.

Then came also (m) Publicans to be bap- 12.
 tized, and said unto him, *Master, what*
shall we do?

(k) *Pharisees*, a sect amongst the Jews that pre-
 tended to more than ordinary holiness and an ex-
 act observance of the Law.

(l) *Sadducees*, a sect amongst the Jews that be-
 lieved not the Resurrection nor that there was An-
 gels or Spirits.

(m) *Publicans* were gatherers of the Tolls and Cu-
 stoms, and in general disrepute for extortion.

- Jordan.
Mat. iii. 13. And he said unto them *exact no more* Anno
than that which is appointed you. *Ærat. 30.*
14. And the Soldiers likewise demanded. *Minist. 1.*
of him, saying, *and what shall we do?*
And he said unto them, *Do violence to no*
man, neither accuse any falsely, and be con-
tent with your (n) wages.

S E C T. XVI.

Christ's Baptism.

- Mar. i. 9. **A**ND it came to pass in those days,
that Jesus came from Nazareth of
Mat. iii. 13. Galilee * to Jordan unto John to be bap- * Mar. i. 9.
tized of him. But John forbad him,
14. saying, I have need to be baptized of
thee, and comest thou to me? And Jesus
15. answering, said unto him, suffer it to be
so now; for thus it becometh us to ful-
fil all righteousness. Then he suffered
him.
16. And Jesus when he was baptized ^bMar. i. 10.
went up straight way out of the water: 11.
and lo the heavens were open'd unto ^{Luk. iii. 21,}
him, and he saw the Spirit of God ^{22.}
descending * in a bodily shape * like a Dove
17. and lighting upon him. And lo a voice
from heaven, saying, This is my beloved
Son, in whom I am well pleased.
* And Jesus himself begun to be a-
Luke iii. 23. bout thirty years of age.

(n) Wages, otherwise Pay.

10
at. 30.
list. 1.

S E C T. XVII.

Christ tempted in the WilderNESS. WilderNESS.

lat. iv. i. ^c **A**ND Jesus being full of the Holy 1. Luk. iv.
r. i. 12. Ghost, returned from Jordan, and
was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,
Luk. iv. *^d and he was there in the wilderness forty 13. Mar. i.
3. 4. 9. days tempted of Satan, * and when he 2. Mat. iv.
11, 12, had fasted forty days and forty nights,
he was afterwards an hungred. And 3.
when the tempter came to him, he said,
if thou be the Son of God, command that
these stones be made bread. But he an- 4. Mat. iv.
swered and said, *it is written* [Deut.
viii. 3.] *Man shall not live by bread a-*
lone; but by every word that proceedeth
out of the mouth of God.

Then the devil * bringeth him to Jerusa- 5.
lem, the holy city, and setteth him on a
pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto
him, *If thou be the son of God cast thy* 9. Luk. iv.
self down: for it is written [Psal. xci. 2.] 5. Mat. iv.
He shall give his Angels charge concern-
ing thee, and in their hands they shall
bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash
thy foot against a stone.

Jesus said unto him, *It is written again* 7.
[Deut. vi. 6.] *Thou shalt not tempt the*
Lord thy God.

Again the devil taketh him up into an 8.
exceeding high mountain, and sheweth
him all the Kingdoms of the world, and
the glory of them * in a moment of time, 9, 6. Luke iv.
at. iv. 9, and the devil said unto him, * *All this*
11. *power*

- Wilderness. power will I give thee, and the glory of Anno
 them, for that is delivered unto me, and Æt. 30.
 to whomsoever I will, I give it, If thou Minist. 1.
- Mat. iv. 7. therefore wilt * fall down and worship
- Luke iv. 7. me * all shall be thine.
8. And Jesus answered and said unto him, *get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, [Deut. x. 20.] Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.* And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season. And [*Jesus*] was with the wild beasts, and behold Angels
- Luke iv. 13. came and ministred unto him.
- Mar. i. 13.
- Mat. iv. 11.

S E C T. XVIII.

Jesus the Word, and John's Testimony of him.

- John i. 1. **I**N the beginning was the word, and the word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the
2. beginning with God; all things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made, that was made. In him
3. was life, and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.
4. There was a man sent from God whose
5. name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that
6. all men through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to
7. bear witness of that Light. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man

no man that cometh into the world. He ^{Wildera.}
^{cat. 30.} was in the world, and the world was ^{John i.}
^{nift. 1.} made by him, and the world knew him ^{10.}
not. He came unto his own, and his own ^{11.}
received him not. But as many as recei- ^{12.}
ved him, to them gave he power to be-
come the sons of God, even to them that
believe on his name: which were born ^{13.}
not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh,
nor of the will of man, but of God.
And the word was made: flesh, and dwelt ^{14.}
amongst us (and we beheld his glory, the
glory as of the only begotten of the Fa-
ther) full of grace and truth. John bare ^{15.}
wimess of him, and cried, saying, This
was he of whom I spake; He that com-
eth after me, is preferred before me; for
he was before me. And of his fulness ^{16.}
have all we received, and grace for grace.
For the Law was given by Moses, but ^{17.}
grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.
No man hath seen God at any time; the ^{18.}
only begotten Son, which is in the bo-
som of the Father, he hath declared him.
And this is the record of John, when the ^{19.}
Jews sent Priests and Levites from Jeru-
salem to ask him, *who art thou?* * And ^{15. Luk. iii,}
as the people were in expectation, and
all men mused in their hearts of John,
whether he were the Christ or not; * He ^{20. John i,}
confessed and denied not: but confessed
I am not the Christ. And they asked him ^{21.}
what then? Art thou Elias? And he
saith, *I am not. Art thou that Prophet?*
and he answered, *no.* Then said they un- ^{22.}
to him, *who art thou? that we may*
give

- John i. 23. *give an answer to them that sent us: Anno
what sayest thou of thy self? He said, I* Ætat. 30.
Minist. 1.
*am the voice of one crying in the wilder-
ness, make straight the way of the Lord,*
24. *as said the Prophet Esaias [xi. 3.] And
they which were sent, were of the Pha-
risees. And they asked him, and said un-
to him, why baptizest thou then, if thou
be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither*
25. *that Prophet? * John answered, saying* Mat. iii.
26. *unto them all, I indeed baptize you with* 11.
27. *water * unto repentance, * but there* Mar. i. 8.
John i. 26.
28. *standeth one among you whom ye know*
29. *not * He it is who coming after me is pre-* Mat. iii.
30. *ferred before me, * [and] is mightier* 11.
31. *than I, * the latchet of whose shoes I am* Mar. i. 7.
Luke iii. 16.
32. *not worthy to stoop down and unloose:*
33. ** he shall baptize you with the Holy*
34. *Ghost and with fire, * whose fan is in his* Mat. iii,
12.
35. *hand, and he will thoroughly purge his
floor, and will gather the wheat into his
garner; but the chaff he will burn with
fire unquenchable. And many other
things in his exhortation preached he un-
to the people.*
Bethabara. * These things were done in Bethabara
John i. 28. *beyond Jordan, where John was bap-
tizing.*
29. * The next day John seeth Jesus coming
unto him, and saith, *Behold the Lamb of
God, which taketh away the sin of the
world. This is he of whom I said, af-
ter me cometh a man, which is preferred
before me: for he was before me. And I
knew him not: but that he should be
made manifest to Israel, therefore am I
come*

ANNO
ETAT. 30.
MINIST. 1.

come baptizing with water. And John John i.
bare record, saying, *I saw the spirit desc-* 32.
cending from heaven like a dove, and it
abode with him. And I knew him not : 33.
but he that sent me to baptize with wa-
ter the same said unto me, upon whom
thou shalt see the spirit descending and
remaining on him, the same is he which
baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. And I 34.
saw, and bare record that this is the son
of God.

Again the next day after, John stood 35.
and two of his Disciples; and looking 36.
upon Jesus as he walked, he saith *behold*
the Lamb of God.

S E C T. XIX.

Jesus first known to Andrew and Peter.

THE two disciples that heard [John] 37.
speak followed Jesus. Then Jesus 48.
turned and saw them following, and
saith unto them, *what seek ye?* They
said unto him, *Rabbi,* (which is to say,
being interpreted, *Master*) *where dwel-*
lest thou? He saith unto them, *come* 39.
and see. They came and saw where he
dwelt, and abode with him that day :
for it was about the (a) tenth hour.

One of the two which heard John 40.
speak, and followed him, was Andrew
Simon Peter's brother. He first findeth 41.
his own brother Simon; and saith unto
him, *we have found the Messiah,* which

(a) *Tenth hour* that is about four in the afternoon.

Galilee. is being interpreted the Christ. And he Anno
John i. 45 brought him to Jesus, and when Jesus be- *Erat. 30.*
held him, he said, *Thou art Simon the* *Minist. 1.*
son of Jona : thou shalt be called Cephas,
which is by interpretation a stone.

S E C T. XX.

Jesus calls Philip, &c.

43. THE day following Jesus would go
forth into Galilee, and findeth Phi-
44. lip; and saith unto him *follow me.* Now
Philip was of Bethsaida the city of An-
45. drew and Peter. Philip findeth Natha-
nael, and saith unto him *we have found*
him of whom Moses in the Law, and the
Prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth
46. *the son of Joseph.* And Nathanael said
unto him, *Can there any good thing come*
out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him,
come and see.
47. Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him,
and saith of him, *Behold an Israelite in-*
48. *deed, in whom is no guile.* Nathanael
saith unto him, *whence knowest thou me?*
Jesus answered and said unto him, *Be-*
fore that Philip called thee when thou
49. *wast under the fig tree, I saw thee,* Na-
thanael answered and saith unto him,
Rabbi thou art the Son of God, thou art
50. *the King of Israel.* Jesus answered and
said unto him, *Because I said unto thee,*
I saw thee under the fig tree, believest
thou? thou shalt see greater things than
51. *these.* And he saith unto him, *verily,*
verily,

10 : verily, I say unto you, hereafter you Galilee.
 11. 30. shall see heaven open, and the Angels of John i.
 11st. 1. God ascending and descending upon the
 Son of Man.

S E C T. XXI.

*Miracle of the water turn'd into Cana
 Wine.*

AND the third day there was a 1. John ii.
 marriage in Cana of Galilee; and
 the mother of Jesus was there, and both 2.
 Jesus was called and his disciples to the
 marriage. And when they wanted wine, 3.
 the mother of Jesus saith unto him, *They*
have no Wine. Jesus saith unto her, 4.
Woman, what have I to do with thee ?
mine hour is not yet come. His mother 5.
 saith unto the servants, *whatsoever he*
saith unto you, do it. And there were 6.
 set there six water pots of stone, after
 the manner of the purifying of the Jews
 containing two or three firkins a piece.
 Jesus saith unto them, *Fill the water pots* 7. Miracle 1.
with water. And they filled them up to 8.
 the brim, and he saith unto them, *Draw*
out now, and bear unto the Governour of
the feast; and they bear it. When the Ru- 9.
 ler of the feast had tasted the water that
 was made wine, and knew not whence
 it was (but the servants which drew the
 water knew) the governour of the feast
 called the bridegroom, and saith unto
 him. *Every man at the beginning doth* 10.
set forth good wine, and when men have
well

Cana.

ii. John.

*well drunk, then that which is worse : Anno
but thou hast kept the good wine until Ætat. 30.
now. Minist. 1.*

11. This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his Glory ; and his disciples believed on him.

Capernaum.

12. After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his Mother, and his brethren and his disciples ; and they continued there not many days.

S E C T. VI.

The first Passover after Christ's baptism. He drives the Traders out of the Temple.

Temple.

13. **A**ND the Jews passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, 14. and the changers of money, sitting. And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen ; and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the Tables ; And said unto them that sold doves, *Take these things hence ; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise.* And his disciples remembered that it was written [Psal. lxi. 9.] *The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.* 17. Then answered the Jews and said unto him, *what sign shewest thou unto us, seeing*

20 *seeing that thou dost these things?* Jerusalem.
 at. 30. Jesus answered and said unto them, John ii.
 ult. 1. *Destroy this temple, and in three days I* 19.
will raise it up. Then said the Jews, 20.
Forty and six years was this temple in
building, and wilt thou rear it up in three
days? But he spake of the temple of 21.
 his body. When therefore he was risen 22.
 from the dead, his disciples remembered
 that he had said this unto them: and
 they believed the scripture, and the
 word which Jesus had said. Now when 23.
 he was in Jerusalem at the Passover, in
 the feast day, many believed in his name,
 when they saw the miracles which he
 did. But Jesus did not commit himself 24.
 unto them, because he knew all men,
 and needed not that any should testify 25.
 of man, for he knew what was in man.

SECT. XXIII.

Christ's conference with Nicodemus.

THERE was a man of the Pharisees, 1. John iii.
 named Nicodemus, a ruler of the
 Jews: the same came to Jesus by night 2.
 and said unto him Rabbi, *we know that*
thou art a Teacher come from God, for
no man can do these miracles that thou
dost except God be with him. Jesus an- 3.
 swered and said unto him, *verily, verily,*
I say unto thee, except a man be born a-
gain, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.
 Nicodemus saith unto him, *How can a* 4.
man be born when he is old? can he en-

- Jerusalem. *ter the second time, into his mother's* Anno
 John. iii. 5. *womb, and he born?* Jesus answered, *Ætat. 30.*
 "verily, verily, I say unto thee, except *Minist. 1.*
 "a man be born of water and of the spi-
 "rit, he cannot enter into the kingdom
 6. "of God. That which is born of the
 "flesh, is flesh; and that which is born
 7. "of the spirit, is spirit. Marvel not
 "that I said unto thee, ye must be born
 8. "again. The wind bloweth where it
 "listeth, and thou hearest the sound
 "thereof, but canst not tell whence it
 "cometh, and whither it goeth: so is
 "every one that is born of the spirit.
 9. Nicodemus answered and said unto him,
 10. *How can these things be?* Jesus answered
 and said unto him, "Art thou a Ma-
 "ster of Israel, and knowest not these
 11. "things? verily, verily, I say unto
 "thee, we speak that we do know,
 "and testify that we have seen; and ye
 12. "receive not our witness. If I have told
 "you earthly things and ye believe not,
 "how shall ye believe if I tell you of
 13. "heavenly things? And no man hath
 "ascended up to heaven but he that
 "came down from heaven, *even* the son
 14. "of man which is in heaven. And as
 "Moses lifted up the serpent in the
 "wilderness, even so must the son of
 15. "man be lifted up: That whosoever be-
 "lieveth in him, should not perish, but
 16. "have eternal Life. For God so loved
 "the world, that he gave his only be-
 "gotten Son, that whosoever believeth
 "in him, should not perish but have
 "ever-

no " everlasting Life. For God sent not Jerusalem.
at. 30. " his son into the world to condemn the John iii.
nist. 1. " world; but that the world through 17.
" him might be saved. He that believ- 18.
" eth on him, is not condemned: but he
" that believeth not, is condemned al-
" ready, because he hath not believed in
" the name of the only begotten son of
" God. And this is the condemnation, 19.
" that light is come into the world,
" and men loved darkness rather than
" light, because their deeds were evil.
" For every one that doth evil hateth 20.
" the light; neither cometh to the
" light, lest his deeds should be repro-
" ved. But he that doth truth cometh 21.
" to the light, that his deeds may be
" made manifest, that they are wrought
" in God.

S E C T. XXIV.

*Jesus departs from Jerusalem with Judas,
his disciples and baptizeth.*

AFTER these things came Jesus 22.
and his disciples into the land of Ju-
dea, and there he tarried with them, and
baptized.

S E C T. XXV.

Anno
Ærat. 30.
Minist. I.

Enon.

John the Baptist continues to baptize in Enon, gives a Testimony concerning Christ.

- John iii. 23. **A**ND John also was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came,
 24. and were baptized. For John was not yet cast into prison.
 25. Then there arose a question between some of John's disciples, and the Jews
 26. about purifying. And they came unto John and said unto him, *Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.* John
 27. answered and said, "a man can receive
 " nothing, except it be given him from
 28. " heaven; ye your selves bear me witness,
 " that I said I am not the Christ, but
 29. " that I am sent before him. He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but
 " the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth, and heareth him, rejoiceth
 " greatly because of the bridegroom's
 " voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.
 30. " He must increase, but I must
 31. " decrease. He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he
 " that cometh from heaven, is above all.
 32. " And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiveth

nno " veth his testimony. He that hath re-Enon.
 itat. 30. " ceived his testimony, hath set to his 33. John iii.
 inist. 1. " seal that God is true. For he whom 34.
 " God hath sent, speaketh the words of
 " God : for God giveth not the spirit by
 " measure *unto him*.
 " The Father loveth the son, and hath 35.
 " given all things into his hand. He 36.
 " that believeth on the son, hath ever-
 " lasting life, and he that believeth not
 " the son, shall not see Life; but the
 " wrath of God abideth on him.

S E C T. XXVI.

John put in Prison by Herod.

Mar. xiv. **B**UT Herod the Tetrarch added yet 19. Luk. iii.
 3. this above all, that he shut up John 20.
 in prison, being reproved by him for He- 19.
 rodias his brother Philip's wife, * for he 17. Mar. vi.
 had married her, * and for all the evils 19. Luke iii.
 which Herod had done. * For John had 18. Mar. vi.
 said unto Herod, *It is not lawful for*
thee to have thy Brother's wife, There- 19.
 fore Herodias had a quarrel against him,
 and would have killed him, but she
 could not. For Herod feared John, know- 20.
 ing that he was a just man and an holy,
 and observed him; and when he heard
 him, he did many things and heard
 him gladly. * And when he would 3. Mat. xiv.
 have put him to death, he feared the
 multitude, because they counted him as
 a prophet.

S E C T. XXVII.

Anno
Ætat. 30
Minist. 1.

Discourses of Jesus with the Samaritan woman.

- John iv. 1. **W**HEN therefore the Lord knew,
how the Pharisees had heard that
Jesus made and baptized more disciples
2. than John, (though Jesus himself bapti-
Mat. iv. 12. zed not, but his disciples) * Now when
Jesus heard [*also*] that John was cast into
John iv. 3. Prison. * He left Judea, * and departed a-
gain into Galilee, and he must needs go
4. through Samaria. Then cometh he to a
City of Samaria, which is called Sychar,
Sychar: near to the parcel of ground that Jacob
5. gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's
well was there; Jesus therefore being
wearied with his Journey, sat thus on
the well, and it was about the sixth
hour.
7. There cometh a woman of Samaria
to draw water: Jesus saith unto her,
8. *Give me to drink.* (For his disciples
were gone away unto the City to buy
9. meat) Then saith the woman of Samaria
unto him, *How is that thou being a
few askest drink of me, which am a
woman of Samaria?* (for the Jews have no
10. dealings with the (a) Samaritans.) Jesus

(a) Samaritans were a people that after the carrying away of the ten Tribes into Captivity inhabited that Country, betwixt whom and the Jews there was great enmity.

answered

Anno answered and said unto her, if thou Sychar: .
 Etat. 30. knewest the gift of God, and who it is John iv.
 Etat. I. that saith to thee, give me to drink,
 thou wouldest have asked of him, and
 he would have given thee living wa-
 ter. The woman saith unto him, Sir, 11.
 thou hast nothing to draw with, and the
 well is deep: from whence then hast
 thou that living water? Art thou great- 12.
 er than our father Jacob, which gave us
 the well, and drank thereof himself, and
 his children and his cattel? Jesus answe- 13.
 red and said unto her, Whosoever drin-
 keth of this water shall thirst again, But 14.
 whosoever drinketh of the water that
 I shall give him, shall never thirst: but
 the water that I shall give him, shall be
 in him a well of water springing up unto
 everlasting Life. The woman saith un- 15.
 to him, Sir, give me this water, that I
 thirst not, neither come hither to draw.
 Jesus saith unto her, Go call thy Hus- 16.
 band, and come hither. The woman an- 17.
 swered and said, I have no Husband.
 Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said,
 I have no husband: For thou hast had 18.
 five husbands, and him whom thou now hast
 is not thy husband: in that saidst thou
 truly. The woman saith unto him, Sir, 19.
 I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fa- 20.
 thers worshipped in this mountain, and
 ye say that in Jerusalem is the place
 where men ought to worship. Jesus saith 21.
 unto her, " woman believe me, the
 " hour cometh when ye shall neither in
 " this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem
 D 4 " worship

Sycar.

John iv.

22. "worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what : we know what we worship: for Salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth : for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a spirit and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.
23. "The woman saith unto him, *I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ, when he is come he will tell us all things.*
24. Jesus saith unto her, *I that speak unto thee am he.*
25. And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman : yet no man said, *What seekest thou ? or why talkest thou with her ?*
26. The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the City, and saith to the men, *Come see a man which told me all things that ever I did : is not this the Christ ?*
27. Then they went out of the City, and came unto him.
28. In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, *Master, eat.* But he said unto them, *I have meat to eat that ye know not of.* Therefore said the disciples one to another, *Haith any man brought him ought to eat ?* Jesus saith unto them, "My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work : say not ye there are yet four months, and then cometh harvest ? behold

Anno

Ætar. 30.

Minist. 1.

Anno " hold I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, Sychar.
 Ætat. 30. " and look on the fields; for they are John iv.
 Minist. 1. " white already to harvest. And he that 36.
 " reapeth receiveth wages, and ga-
 " thereth fruit unto life eternal, that both
 " he that soweth, and he that reapeth
 " may rejoice together. And herein is 37.
 " that saying true, one soweth and ano-
 " ther reapeth, I sent you to reap that 38.
 " whereon ye bestowed no labour, other
 " men laboured and ye entered into their
 " labours.

And many of the Samaritans of that 39.
 City believed on him for the saying of
 the woman which testified, *He told me*
all that ever I did.

So when the Samaritans were come 40.
 unto him, they besought him that he
 would tarry with them, and he abode 41.
 there two days: and many more belie-
 ved, because of his own word; and said 42.
 unto the woman, *Now we believe, not*
because of thy saying, for we have heard
him our selves, and know that this is in-
deed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

Now after two days he departed thence 43. Galilee,
 and went into Galilee.

S E C T. XXVIII.

Jesus goes into Galilee, preaches there,
and at Nazareth, where he is ill
received.

AND Jesus returned in the power of 14. Luke iv,
 the spirit into Galilee: and there
 went

- Galilee. out a fame of him through all the region Anno
 Luke iv. round about. *Ætat. 30*
Minist. 1
- Mar. i. 14. * Now after that John was put in
 prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preach-
 ing the Gospel of the kingdom of God,
 and saying, *The time is fulfilled, and the*
kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye
 Luke iv. 15. *and believe the Gospel.* * And he
 taught in their Synagogues, being glo-
 rified of all.
- Nazareth. 16. And he came to Nazareth, where he
 had been brought up; and as his custom
 was, he went into the Synagogue on the
 17. Sabbath day, and stood up to read. And
 there was delivered unto him the book
 of the Prophet Esaias; and when he had
 opened the book, he found the place
 18. where it was written [Isai. lxi. i.] *The*
spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he
hath anointed me to preach the gospel to
the poor: he hath sent me to heal the
broken hearted, to preach deliverance
to the captives, and recovering of sight
to the blind, to set at liberty them that
 19. *are bruised. To preach the acceptable*
year of the Lord.
- And he closed the book, and he gave it
 again to the minister, and sat down,
 And the eyes of all them that were in the
 Synagogue were fastened on him.
20. And he began to say unto them, *This*
day is this scripture fulfilled in your
ears.
21. And all bare him witness and wonde-
 red at the gracious words which proceed-
 ed out of his mouth, And they said,

anno is not this Joseph's son? And he said Nazareth.
 Eccl. 30. unto them. " Ye will surely say unto Luke iv.
 minist. i. " me this proverb, Physician heal thy self:
 " whatsoever we have heard done in
 " Capernaum, do also here in thy coun-
 John iv. " try. * And he said, verily I say unto 24.
 4 " you, no prophet is accepted in his own
 " country. But I tell you of a truth, 25.
 " many widows were in Israel in the days
 " of Elias, when the heaven was shut
 " up three years and six months, when
 " great famine was throughout all the
 " land: But unto none of them was 26.
 " Elias sent save unto Sarepta, a city
 " of Sidon, unto a woman that was a
 " widow. And many lepers were in 27.
 " Israel in the time of Eliseus the pro-
 " phet: and none of them was clean-
 " sed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

And all they in the Synagogue, when 28.
 they heard these things, were filled
 with wrath, and rose up and thrust 29.
 him out of the city, and led him un-
 to the brow of the hill (whereon their
 city was built) that they might cast
 him down headlong. But he passing 30.
 through the mids of them went his
 way.

S E C T. XXIX.

*Jesus cures the Son of a noble man Galilee,
 of Capernaum,*

THEN when [Jesus] was come 45. John iv.
 into Galilee, the Galileans received
 him,

Galilee.
John iv.

him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also

Anno
Ætat. 3
Minist.

Cana.

46. went unto the feast. So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine; and there was a certain noble man whose son was sick at

47. Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son,

48. for he was at the point of death. Then said Jesus unto him, *Except ye see signs*

49. *and wonders, ye will not believe.* The noble man saith unto him, *Sir, come*

50. *down e'er my child dye.* Jesus saith unto

Miracle 2.

him, *go thy way, thy son liveth.* And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

51. And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him saying, *thy son liveth.*

52. Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend: and they said unto him, *yesterday at the seventh*

53. *hour the fever left him.* So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in which Jesus said unto him, *Thy son liveth*; and himself believed and his whole house.

This is again the second miracle that Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

Anno
Ætat. 30.
Minist. 1.

S E C T. XXX.

Jesus goes to Capernaum and preaches there, cures a man that had an unclean spirit.

AND [*Jesus*] leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon, and Nephtalim: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Elías the prophet [ix. 1, 2.] saying, *The Land of Zabulon and the Land of Nephtalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: The people which sat in darkness, saw great light, and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.*

^a Mar. i. 21. ^{*} And [*Jesus*] came down to Capernaum a city of Galilee, ^{*} ^b on the sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at his Doctrine: for he taught them as

one that had authority, ^{*} for his word was with power ^{*} and not as the scribes.

^{*} From that time Jesus began to preach and to say, *Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.*

^a Mar. i. ^{*} And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cryed out with a loud voice saying, *let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth?*

art

- Capernaum. *art thou come to destroy us? I know* Anno
 Luke iv. *thee who thou art, the holy one of God.* Ætat. 30.
 Miracle 3. 35. And Jesus rebuked him saying, *hold thy* Ministr. 1.
 Mark i. 26. *peace and come out of him.* * And when
 Luke iv. 35. the unclean spirit had * thrown him * Luke iv.
 Mark i. 26. in the midst, * torn him, and cried with 35.
 Luke iv. 35. a loud voice, he came out of him * and
 Mark i. 27. hurt him not. * ^b And they were all a- ^b Luke iv.
 mazed, inasmuch that they questioned 36.
 among themselves, saying *what thing is*
 Luke iv. 36. *this? what new doctrine is this? * for* Mar. i. 27.
 with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come
 Mark i. 27. *out, * and they do obey him.* ^d And ^d Luk. iv.
 28. immediately his fame spread abroad
 throughout all the region round about
 Galilee.

S E C T. XXXI.

Jesus cures Simon Peter's Mother-in-law of a fever.

29. ^a **A**ND forthwith when they were * Mat. viii.
 come out of the Synagogue they 14.
 Mar. viii. 14. } entred into the house of Simon * Peter Luk. iv. 30.
 Mar. i. 29. } * and Andrew, with James and John.
 Luke iv. 33. * ^f And Simon's wives mother was ^f Mat. viii.
 39. taken with a great fever, and they be- 14.
 sought him for her; and he stood over Mar. i. 30.
 Mar. i. 31. her and rebuked the fever, * ^g and he ^g Mat. viii.
 came and took her by the hand and lift 15, 16.
 Miracle 4. her up; and immediately the fever left Luk. iv. 39.
 her, and she ministred unto them. 40.

S E C T.

10
Mt. 30.
Lift. 1.

S E C T. XXXII.

*Several sick and possessed with devils Capernaum.
cured by Christ.*

AND at even when the sun did set, ^{32. Mar. i.} they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils; and all the city was gathered together at the door. And he healed ^{33. Miracle. 5.} many that were sick of divers diseases; ^{34.} * * and he cast out the spirits with ^{16. Mat. iii.} *his* word, * crying out and saying *thou art* ^{41. Luke iv.} *Christ the son of God*, and he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ, * and ^{16. Mat. viii.} healed all that were sick, that it might be ^{17.} fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet [liii.4.] saying *Himself took our infirmities and bare our sicknesses.*

S E C T. XXXIII.

*Jesus retired into a Desert, where
he is followed by many.*

AND in the morning ^{35. Mar. i.} rising up a great while before day, he went out and departed into a solitary place and there prayed. And Simon and they ^{36.} that were with him followed after him; * and the people sought him and came ^{42. Luke iv.} unto him, and when they had found him ^{37. Mar. i.} they said unto him, *all men seek for thee*; * and stayed him that he should not de- ^{42. Luke iv.} part

Desert. part from them. * And he said unto them, Anno
 Luke iv. 43. *I must preach the kingdom of God to* ^{Ætat. 30}
other cities also, for therefore am I ^{Minist. 1}
sent. ^{Mar. i. 3}

S E C T. XXXIV.

Lake of Gen- *Jesus goeth into a ship to preach to*
 nezareth. *the people, a great draught of fishes,*
he calleth Andrew and Peter.

- Luke v. 1. **A**ND it came to pass, that as the
 people pressed upon him to hear
 the word of God he stood by the (a) lake
 Mar. i. 16. of Gennezareth. ^b * Now as he walked ^{Mat. iv. 1}
 Mat. iv. 18. by the sea of Galilee, ^c he saw two bre- ^{Mar. i. 16}
 thren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew
 his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for
 they were fishers) * And saw two ships
 standing by the lake: but the fisher-
 men were gone out of them, and were
 washing *their* nets: And he entred into
 one of the ships, which was Simon's,
 and prayed him that he would thrust
 out a little from the land: and he
 sat down and taught the people out of
 the ship. ○
 4. Now when he had left speaking, he
 said unto Simon, *Launch out into the*
deep, and let down your nets for a
 5. *draught.* And Simon answering, said

(a) Lake of Gennezareth and the sea of Galilee
 were the same thing, and called also the sea of
 Tiberias.

unto him, *Master we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.* And when they had done this, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake. And they beckoned unto *their* partners which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships so, that they began to sink. When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus knees, saying, *Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord.* For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken; * * and Jesus said unto them, *fear not, come ye after me; and I will make you to become fishers of men.* And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

ANNO
ÆON. 30.
MINIST. I.

Genesareth.
Luke v.

* Mat. iv. 19, 20.
Luke v. 10. 17. Mar. i. 11.

S E C T. XXXV.

Jesus calleth John and James the sons of Zebedee.

AND going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them, and they immediately left * * their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

* Mar. i. 19, 20.
Luke v. 10. 21. Mat. iv. 26.
Mar. i. 22.
* Mat. iv. 22.
Luke v. 11.

Galilee.

Anno
Ætat. 30
Minist. 1

S E C T. XXXVI.

Jesus goes and teaches about all Galilee and heals the sick.

iv. Mat. 23.

- A**ND Jesus went about all Galilee teaching in their (a) Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the
24. people. And his fame went throughout all (b) Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases, and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the Palfie; and he healed them.
25. And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from (c) Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

Miracle.

The end of the first year of Christ's Ministry.

(a) *Synagogue* was a place where the Jews assembled on the Sabbath-day, to hear the Law and the Prophets read and explain'd.

(b) *Syria* a Country confining on Palestine on the north, and part of the east.

(c) *Decapolis*, a part of the Land of Canaan lying on both sides the River Jordan at its coming out of the Sea of Galilee.

S E C T.

Anno
Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.

Galilee.

SECT. XXXVII.

Jesus cleanseth the Leper.

^a Mat. viii. ^{2.} ^{Mar. i. 40.} **A**ND it came to pass when he was ^{12.} Luke v. in a certain City, ^a behold a man full of Leprosie: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, *Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.* ^{*} And Jesus moved with compassion, ^b put forth *his* hand and touched him; and saith unto him, *I will, be thou* ^{41.} Mar. i. ^{3.} ^{Luke v. 13.} *clean.* And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the Leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed. And he straightly charged him, and forthwith ^{42.} ^{Miracle.} ^{43.} sent him away; ^c and saith unto him, ^{44.} ^{4.} ^{Luke v. 14.} *see thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thy self to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded for a Testimony unto them.* But he went out and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter: ^{45.} ^{15.} ^{Luke v.} ^d and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities ^{*} insomuch that Jesus could no ^{45.} ^{Mar. i.} more openly enter into the city, ^e and ^{16.} ^{Luk. v.} he withdrew himself into the Wilderness and prayed.

Capernaum.

Anno
Ætat. 31.
Mimist. 2.

SECT. XXXVIII.

Christ cureth a man sick of the Palsie.

- Mat. i. 9. **A**ND [*Jesus*] entred into a Ship,
and passed over and came into his
own city.
- Mar. i. 2. * And again he entred into Caperna-
um after *some* days, and it was noised
Luk. xvii. 5. that he was in the house: * And it
came to pass on a certain day, as he
was teaching, that there were Pharisees
and Doctors of the Law sitting by, which
were come out of every town of Galilee,
and Judea, and Jerusalem; and the pow-
er of the Lord was *present* to heal them.
- Mar. ii. 2. And straightway many were gathered to-
gether, insomuch that there was no room
to receive *them*, no not so much as
about the door: and he preached the
- Mat. ix. 2. word unto them * and behold they * Mar. ii. 3
brought to him a man sick of the Pal- Luk. v. 18
- Mar. ii. 3. sie, lying on a bed * which was born of
- Luk. v. 18. four * and they sought means to bring
19. him in and to lay him before him. * And ^b Mat. ix.
when they could not find by what way ^{2, 3, 4, 5}
they might bring him in, because of the ^{6, 7, 8.}
multitude, they went upon the housetop, Luk. v. 2c
and let him down through the tiling with ^{21, 22, 23}
24, 25, 26
- Mar. ii. 5. his couch into the midst before Jesus. *
- Miracle. When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto
the sick of the Palsie, *Son, thy sins be
forgiven thee.*
6. But there were certain Scribes sitting
there and reasoning in their hearts.
Why

Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? And immediately when Jesus perceived in his Spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, * Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? * Why reason ye these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the Palsie, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, arise, and take up thy bed and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins: (he saith to the sick of the Palsie) I say unto thee arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all * glorifying God, * inasmuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God * which had given such power unto men, * saying we never saw it on this fashion; * and were filled with fear, saying we have seen strange things to day.

SECT. XXXIX.

The calling of Matthew.

Sea of Galilee.

AND [Jesus] went forth again by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them. * And as Jesus passed forth from thence, * he saw Levi, * named Matthew, * the son of Alphaeus, sitting at the receipt of

Sea of Galilee. Custom, and said unto him, follow me; ^{Anno.}
 Luk. v. 28. * and he left all and followed him. ^{Ætat. 31.}
^{Minist. 2.}
^{* Mat. ix. 9.}

SECT. XL.

*Matthew makes a feast for Christ, who
 eats with Publicans and Sinners.*

29. ^{*} AND Levi made [*Jesus*] a great ^{Mat. ix.}
 feast in his own house: and there ^{10.}
 was a great company of publicans * and ^{Mar. ii. 15.}
 Mat. ix. 10. sinners came ^b and sat down with him ^{b Luk. v.}
 Mar. ii. 15. and his disciples: * for there were ma- ^{29.}
 ny and they followed him.
 Luk. v. 30. } ^{*c} But the Scribes and Pharisees * [*see-* ^{c Mat. ix.}
 Mar. ii. 16. } *ing*] him eat with publicans and sinners ^{11.}
 Luk. v. 30. * murmured against his disciples saying, ^{Mar. ii. 16.}
 Mar. ii. 16. * ^d How is it that he eateth and drink- ^{d Mat. ix}
 17. *eth with Publicans and Sinners?* When ^{11, 12,}
 Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, ^{13.}
They that are whole have no need of a Phi- ^{Luk. v. 30.}
sitian, but they that are sick. I came not ^{31. 32.}
to call the righteous but sinners to re-
 Mat. ix. 13. *pentance.* * But go ye and learn what
that meaneth, I will have mercy and
 Mar. ii. 18. *not sacrifice.* [*Hosea vi. 6.*]
 * And the Disciples of John, and of
 the Pharisees used to fast, * and they ^{c Mat. ix.}
 come and say unto him, *Why do the* ^{14, 15.}
disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast ^{Luk. v. 33,}
 Mat. ix. 14. } ** oft * and make prayers * but thy disci-* ^{34, 35.}
 Luk. v. 33. } *ples fast not?*
 Mar. ii. 18. }
 19. And Jesus said unto them, *Can the*
children of the Bridechamber fast, while
the Bridegroom is with them? as long
as they have the Bridegroom with them
they

Anno they cannot fast, But the days will Sea of Galilee
 Ætæ. 31. come, when the Bridegroom shall be ta- 20. Mar. ii.
 Minist. 2. ken away from them, and then shall
 they fast in those days.

* And he spake also a parable unto 36. Luk. v.
 • Mat. ix. " them, * No man putteth a piece of a new
 16, 17. " garment upon an old: if otherwise,
 Mar. ii. 21, " then both the new maketh a rent, and
 22. " the piece that was taken out of the
 " new agrees not with the old, * and the 21. Mar. ii.
 " rent is made worfe: * and no man put- 37. Luk. v.
 " eth new wine into old (a) bottles;
 " else the new wine will burst the bot-
 " tles, and be spilled, and the bottles
 " shall perish. But new wine must be 38.
 " put into new bottles, and both are
 " preserved. No man also having drunk 39.
 " old wine, straightway desireth new:
 " for he saith, the old is better.

S E C T. XLI.

*The second Passover after Christ's
 Baptism.*

*The Paralytic cur'd at the pool of Jerusalem.
 Bethesda.*

AFTER this there was a feast of 1. Joh. v.
 the Jews, and Jesus went up to
 Jerusalem. Now there is at Jerusalem 2.
 by the sheep market a pool, which is
 called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethes-

(a) *Bottles.* Their bottles that they kept their
 wine in, were made of Skins.

Jerusalem.

Joh. v. 2.

da, having five porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. For an Angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, *wilt thou be made whole?* The impotent man answered him, *Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool; but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.*

8. Jesus saith unto him, *rise, take up thy bed and walk.* And immediately the man was made whole; and took up his bed and walked: and on the same day was the Sabbath. The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, *it is the Sabbath-day, it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed;* he answered them, *he that made me whole, the same said unto me, take up thy bed and walk.* Then asked they him, *what man is that which said unto thee, take up thy bed and walk?* And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place. Afterwards Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, *Behold thou art made whole, sin no more lest a worse thing come unto thee.*

Miracle.

The

Anno
 Eccl. 31. The man departed and told the Jews Jerusalem.
 Minist. 2. *that it was Jesus which had made him* ^{15.} John iv.
whole, And therefore did the Jews per- ^{16.}
 secute Jesus, and sought to slay him,
 because he had done this thing on the
 sabbath day. But Jesus answered them. ^{17.}
My Father worketh hitherto and I work, ^{18.}
 Therefore the Jews sought the more to
 kill him, because he not only had broken
 the sabbath, but said also *that God was*
his Father, making himself equal with
God. Then answered Jesus, and said ^{19.}
 unto them, " Verily, verily I say unto
 " you, The Son can do nothing of him-
 " self, but what he seeth the Father do;
 " for what things soever he doeth, these
 " also doeth the Son likewise. For the ^{20.}
 " Father loveth the Son, and sheweth
 " him all things that himself doeth :
 " and he will shew him greater works
 " then these, that ye may marvel. For ^{21.}
 " as the Father raiseth up the dead, and
 " and quickneth them: even so the Son
 " quickneth whom he will. For the Fa-
 " ther judgeth no man; but hath com- ^{22.}
 " mitteth all judgment unto the Son:
 " That all men should honour the Son, ^{23.}
 " even as they honour the Father. He
 " that honoureth not the Son, honou-
 " reth not the Father which hath sent
 " him.
 " Verily, verily, I say unto you, He ^{24.}
 " that heareth my word, and believeth
 " on him that sent me, hath everlasting
 " life, and shall not come into condem-
 " nation, but is passed from death unto
 " Life.
 " Verily,

Jerusalem.
John v.

25. " Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Anno
" hour is coming and now is, when the ^{Etat. 3}
" dead shall hear the voice of the Son ^{Minist.}
" of God, and they that hear shall live.
26. " For as the Father has life in him-
" self, so hath he given to the Son
27. " to have life in himself: and hath
" given him authority to execute judg-
" ment also, because he is the Son of
" man.
28. " Marvel not at this: for the hour is
" coming, in the which all that are in
29. " the graves shall hear his voice, and
" shall come forth, they that have done
" good unto the resurrection of life;
" and they that have done evil, unto the
" resurrection of damnation.
30. " I can of mine own self do nothing:
" as I hear, I judge: and my judgment
" is just, because I seek not mine own
" will, but the will of the Father which
31. " hath sent me. If I bear witness of my
32. " self, my witness is not true. There
" is another that beareth witness of me,
" and I know that the witness which he
33. " witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent
" unto John, and he bare witness unto
34. " the truth. But I receive not testi-
" mony from man: but these things I
35. " say that ye might be saved. He was
" a burning and a shining light: and ye
" were willing for a season to rejoice
36. " in his light. But I have greater wit-
" ness than *that* of John: For the works
" which the Father has given me to fi-
" nish, the same works that I do, bear
" witness

nno
 Stat. 31.
 inist. 2.

“ witness of me, that the Father has sent Jerusalem.
 “ me. And the Father himself which has 37. John v.
 “ sent me, hath born witness of me. Ye
 “ have neither heard his voice, at any
 “ time, nor seen his shape. And ye 38.
 “ have not his word abiding in you: for
 “ whom he hath sent, him ye believe
 “ not. Search the scriptures, for in them 39.
 “ ye think ye have eternal life, and
 “ they are they which testify of me.
 “ And ye will not come to me, that ye 40.
 “ might have life. I receive not honour 41.
 “ from men. But I know you, that ye 42.
 “ have not the Love of God in you.
 “ I am come in my Father’s name, and 43.
 “ ye receive me not: if another shall
 “ come in his own name, him ye will
 “ receive. How can ye believe, which 44.
 “ receive honour one from another, and
 “ seek not the honour that *cometh* from
 “ God only? Do not think that I will 45.
 “ accuse you to the Father: there is one
 “ that accuseth you *even* Moses, in
 “ whom ye trust. For had ye believed 46.
 “ Moses, ye would have believed me:
 “ for he wrote of me. But if ye believe 47.
 “ not his writings, how shall ye believe
 “ my words.

S E C T. XLII.

Anno
Act. 31.
Minist. 2.

The Pharisees reprove Christ's Disciples for plucking the ears of Corn on the sabbath.

- Luke vi. 1. **A**ND it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that [*Jesus*] went through the corn fields, and his Disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands. ^{a Mat. xii. 1. Mar. ii. 23.}
- Mar. xii. 2. * ^b But when the Pharisees saw *it* they said unto him, Behold thy disciples do that which is not lawful upon the sabbath day. ^{b Mar. ii. 24. Luk. vi. 2.}
- Luk. vi. 3. * ^c And Jesus answering them, said "have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him?" ^{c Mat. xii. 3. Mar. ii. 25.}
- Mar. ii. 26. * ^d How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did take and eat the shew bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone? ^{d Mar. xii. 4. Luk. vi. 4.}
- Mar. xii. 5. * Or have ye not read in the Law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple prophane the sabbath, and are blameless? But I say unto you, that in this place is ^e *one* greater than the temple. ^{e Mar. xii. 4. Mar. ii. 26.}
- Mar. ii. 27. * And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath. ^f But if ye had known what this meaneth, [*Hosea vi. 6.*] *I will have mercy*

Anno *mercy and not sacrifice*, "ye would
East. 31. "not have condemned the guiltless. *Mat. xii.*
Minist. 2. "• For the son of man is Lord even of *g.*
Mar. ii. 28.
Luk. vi. 5. "the sabbath.

S E C T. XLIII.

Jesus cureth a man that had a withered hand on the sabbath day; at which the Jews being offended, take counsel against him.

AND when [Jesus] was departed *9. Mat. xii.*
 thence *• it came to pass also on *6. Luke vi.*
9, 10. another sabbath, that he entred into the
Mar. iii. 1, Synagogue and taught: and there was
2, 3. a man whose right hand was withered.
 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched *7.*
 him whether he would heal on the
 sabbath day: that they might find an
 accusation against him. But he knew their *8.*
 thoughts, and said unto the man which
 had the withered hand, *Rise up, and*
stand forth in the mids. And he arose
 and stood forth. * And they asked him *10. Mat. xii.*
 saying, *It is lawful to heal on the sab-*
bath days? that they might accuse him.
 "And he said unto them, what man *11.*
 shall there be among you, that shall have
 "one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on
 "the sabbath day, will he not lay hold
 "on it, and lift it out? How much *12.*
 "then is a man better than a sheep?
 "wherefore it is lawful to do well on
 "the sabbath days.

* Then

- Luk. vi. 9. * Then said Jesus unto them I will ask you one thing, *Is it lawful on the sabbath days to do good or to do evil? to save life or to destroy it?* * But they held their peace. Anno Ætat. 31 Minist. Mar. iii.
- Mar. iii. 4. *save life or to destroy it?* * But they held their peace.
5. ^b And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, ^c he ^c Luk. vi. 1 Mat. xi 13, 14 Luk. vi. 1 faith unto the man, *stretch forth thine hand.* And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.
- Miracle.
6. And the Pharisees went forth with the Herodians, and straightway took counsel against him, how they might destroy him. * And they were filled with madness and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.
- Luk. vi. 11.
- Mat. xii. 15. * But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence.

S E C T. XLIV.

Galilee. *Jesus withdraweth himself to the Sea, where a great multitude follow him, to hear him, and be healed.*

- Mark iii. 7. **B**UT Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: ^a and a ^a Mat. x 15 great multitude followed him from Galilee and from Judea. And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan: and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude when they had heard what great things he did, came

Anno came unto him. And he spake to his 9. Mar. iii.
 Ærat. 31. disciples, that a small ship should wait
 Minist. 2. on him, because of the multitude, lest
 a Mat. xii. they should throng him. * For he had 10.
 15. healed many, insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. And unclean spirits 11.
 when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the
 b Mat. xii. son of God. b And he straightly charged 12.
 16. them, that they should not make him known. * That it might be fulfilled 17. Mat. xii.
 which was spoken by Esaias the prophet [xlii. i.] saying, *Behold my servant* 18.
whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not 19.
strive, nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth Judgment unto Victory. 20.
And in his name shall the Gentiles 21.
trust.

S E C T. XLV.

The choosing of the twelve Apostles. Galilee.

AND it came to pass in those days, 12. Luk. vi.
 c Mar. iii. that c he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God. And when it was day 13.
 he called unto him his disciples: * and 13. Mar. iii.
 d Mar. iii. they came unto him, * d and of them he 13. Luk. vi. }
 14. chose 14. Mar. iii. }

- Galilee. chose twelve * that they should be with Anno
 Luk. vi. 13. him, * whom also he named Apostles : Act. 31.
 Mar. iii. 14. * and that he might send them forth to Ministr. 2.
 15. preach : and to have power to heal sick-
 nesses, and to cast out devils.
- Luke vi. 14. * * Simon (whom he also named Pe- * Mar. iii.
 Mar. iii. 17. ter) and Andrew his brother, * ^b And 16. 11.
 James the son of Zebedee, and John the ^b Luk. vi.
 brother of James, and he surnamed them 14, 15.
 Boanerges, which is the sons of Thun-
 18. der.) And Philip and Bartholomew,
 and Matthew, and Thomas, and James
 16. the son of Alphaeus. * And Judas [also
 Mar. iii. 18. } called] * Thaddeus, * the brother of
 Luk. vi. 16. }
 Mar. iii. 18. } James, * and Simon * the Cananite * called ^c Mar. iii.
 Luk. vi. 15. } Zelotes * ^d and Judas Iscariot, which 18.
 Mat. iii. 19. also betrayed him. ^d Luk. vi.
 16.

S E C T. XLVI.

*Jesus goes into the plain with the
 Apostles, and his other Disciples,
 and is followed by a multitude
 to be healed of their diseases;
 his friends seek to lay hold of
 him.*

- Luke vi. 17. **A**ND he came down with them,
 and stood in the plain, and the
 company of his disciples, and a great
 multitude of people out of all Judea
 and Jerusalem, and from the sea coast
 of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear
 him, and to be healed of their diseases;
 And

And they that were vexed with unclean spirits : and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch him : for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all. Galilee. 18. Luk. vi. 19.

And they went into an house, and the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. 19. Mar. ii. 20.

And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him : for they said he is beside himself. 21.

S E C T. XLVII.

Christ's sermon on the Mount.

AND seeing the multitudes he went up into a mountain : and when he was set his disciples came unto him, * and he lifted up his eyes on his disciples. * And he opened his mouth and taught them, saying, " * Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the Kingdom of heaven. Blessed are they that mourn * now, * for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the Earth. Blessed are they which do hunger * now * after righteousness, for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful : for they they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart : for they shall see God. Blessed are the peace makers : for they shall be called the children of God. Blessed are they which are

1. Mat. v.
20. Luk. vi.
2. Mat. v.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
9.
10.
11.
12.
13.
14.
15.
16.
17.
18.
19.
20.
21. Luk. vi.
4. Mat. v.
21. Luk. vi.
6. Mat. v.
7.
8.
9.
10.
11.
12.
13.
14.
15.
16.
17.
18.
19.
20.
21.

F * " perfe-

- Galilee. " persecuted for righteousness sake, for Anno
 Mat. v. " theirs is the Kingdom of heaven. ^{Æt. 3}
 Luke vi. 22. " * ^a Blessed are ye when men shall hate ^{Minist. 1}
 " you, and when they shall separate ^{• Mat. v. 1}
 " you from their company, and shall
 Mat. v. 11. " * ^b revile you and persecute you, and ^{• Luk. vi}
 " shall say all manner of evil against ^{22, 23.}
 12. " you falsely for my sake. Rejoyce and
 " be exceeding glad : for great is your
 Luk. vi. 23. " reward in heaven : * ^c for in the like ^{• Mat. v. 1}
 " manner, did their fathers unto the
 Mat. v. 12. " * prophets which were before you.
 Luke vi. 24. " But woe unto you that are rich :
 " for ye have received your consolation.
 25. " Woe unto you that are full : for ye
 " shall hunger. Woe unto you that
 " laugh now : for ye shall mourn and
 26. " weep. Woe unto you when all men
 " shall speak well of you : for so did
 " their fathers to the false prophets.
 Mat. v. 13. " Ye are the salt of the earth : but
 " if the salt has lost his savour, where-
 " with shall it be salted ? it is thence-
 " forth good for nothing but to be cast
 " out, and to be trodden under foot of
 " men.
 14. " Ye are the light of the world. A
 " city that is set on a hill cannot be hid ;
 15. " neither do men light a candle, and
 " put it under a bushell, but on a can-
 " dlestick, and it giveth light unto all
 16. " that are in the house. Let your light
 " so shine before men, that they may see
 " your good works, and glorify your
 " father which is in heaven.

" Think

- no
ar. 31. " Think not that I am come to de- Galilee.
uist. 2. " troy the Law or the Prophets : I 17 Mat. v.
" am not come to destroy but to fulfil.
" For verily I say unto you, till heaven 18
" and earth pass, one jot or one tittle
" shall in no wise pass from the Law,
" till all be fulfilled. Whosoever there 19
" fore shall break one of these least
" commands, and shall teach men so,
" he shall be called the least in the
" kingdom of heaven : but whosoever
" shall do and teach them, the same
" shall be called great in the kingdom
" of heaven. For I say unto you, that 20
" except your righteousness shall ex-
" ceed the righteousness of the Scribes
" and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter
" into the kingdom of heaven.
" Ye have heard that it was said by ar.
" them of old time, Thou shalt not kill :
" and whosoever shall kill, shall be in
" danger of the judgment. But I say 22
" unto you, That whosoever is angry
" with his brother without a cause,
" shall be in danger of the judgment :
" and whosoever shall say to his bro-
" ther (a) Raca, shall be in danger of
" the Council : but whosoever shall say,
" Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell
" fire.
" Therefore, if thou bring thy gift 23
" to the altar, and there remembrest
" that thy brother hath ought against
" thee ; leave there thy gift before the 24

(a) Raca is a word of contempt.

Galilee.
Mat. v.

- “ altar, and go thy way ; first be recon- Anno
“ cil’d to thy brother, and then come *Etat. 31*
“ and offer thy gift. *Minist.*
25. “ Agree with thine adversary quick-
“ ly, while thou art in the way with
“ him ; lest at any time the adversary
“ deliver thee to the judge, and the judge
“ deliver thee to the officer, and thou be
26. “ cast into prison. Verily I say unto
“ thee, Thou shalt by no means come
“ out thence, till thou hast paid the ut-
“ termost farthing.
27. “ Ye have heard that it was said by
“ them of old time, Thou shalt not
28. “ commit adultery. But I say unto
“ you, That whosoever looketh on a
“ woman to lust after her, has commit-
“ ted adultery with her already in his
“ heart.
29. “ And if thy right eye offend thee,
“ pluck it out, and cast it from thee ;
“ for it is profitable for thee that one
“ of thy members should perish, and
“ not that thy whole body should be
30. “ cast into hell. And if thy right hand
“ offend thee, cut it off, and cast it
“ from thee ; for it is profitable for thee
“ that one of thy members should
“ perish, and not that thy whole body
“ should be cast into hell.
31. “ It has been said, whosoever shall
“ put away his wife, let him give her
32. “ a writing of divorcement. But I say
“ unto you, that whosoever shall put
“ away his wife, saving for the cause
“ of fornication, causeth her to commit
adultery :

- no " adultery : and whosoever shall marry ^{Gallilee.}
 at. 31. " her that is divorced, committeth a- ^{Mat. v.}
 nist. 2. " dultery.
 " Again, ye have heard that it has been ^{33.}
 " said by them of old time, Thou shalt
 " not forswear thy self, but shalt per-
 " form unto the Lord thine oaths. But ^{34.}
 " I say unto you, swear not at all ;
 " neither by Heaven, for it is God's
 " throne : nor by the Earth, for it is his ^{35.}
 " footstool : neither by Jerusalem, for
 " it is the city of the great King. Nei- ^{36.}
 " ther shalt thou swear by thy head,
 " because thou canst not make one hair
 " white or black. But let your com- ^{37.}
 " munication be, yea, yea ; nay, nay ;
 " for whatsoever is more than these,
 " cometh of evil.
 " Ye have heard that it has been said, ^{38.}
 " an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a
 " tooth. But I say unto you, that ye ^{39.}
 uke vi. " resist not evil : * but whosoever shall
 " smite thee on thy right cheek, turn
 " to him the other also. And if any ^{40.}
 uke vi. " one will sue thee at the law, * and
 " take away thy coat, let him have thy
 " cloke also. And whosoever shall com- ^{41.}
 uke vi. " pel thee to go a mile, go with him
 " twain. * Give to him that asketh ^{42.}
 " thee ; and from him that would bor-
 " row of thee, turn not thou away.
 " Ye have heard that it has been said, ^{43.}
 " Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and
 at.v.44. " hate thy enemy : * * But I say unto ^{27. Luke vi.}
 " you which hear, Love your enemies,
 " do good to them which hate you :

- Galilee. " Bless them that curse you, and pray Anno
 Luke vi. 28. " for them which despitefully use you *Beat.* 31.
 Mat. v. { 44 " * and persecute you: that ye may be *Minist.* 2.
 { 45 " the children of your father which is
 " in heaven: for he maketh his Sun to
 " rise on the evil and on the good, and
 " sendeth rain on the just, and on the
 Luke vi. 32 " unjust. * For if ye love them which *Mat. v. 46*
 " love you, what thank have ye? for
 " sinners also love those that love them.
 Mat. v. 47 " * And if ye salute your brethren only,
 " what do ye more *than others*? Do
 Luke vi. 33 " not even the Publicans so? * And if
 " ye do good to them which do good
 " to you, what thank have ye? for
 " sinners also do even the same. And
 34. " if ye lend to them of whom ye hope
 " to receive, what thank have ye? for
 " sinners also lend to sinners, to receive
 " as much again.
 35. " But love ye your enemies, and do
 " good and lend, hoping for nothing
 " again, and your reward shall be great,
 " and ye shall be the children of the
 " highest; for he is kind unto the un-
 36. " thankful, and to the evil. Be ye
 " therefore merciful, as your Father al-
 Mat. v. 48 " so is merciful. * Be ye therefore
 " perfect, even as your Father which is
 " in heaven is perfect.
 Mat. vi. 1. " Take heed that ye do not your
 " alms before men, to be seen of them,
 " otherwise ye have no reward of your
 " Father which is in heaven. There-
 " fore when thou doest *thine* alms, do
 " not sound a trumpet before thee,
 " as

Anno " as the hypocrites do, in the Syna-Galilee. 20
 Etat. 31. " gogues, and in the Streets, that they Mat. xi. 21
 Minist. 2. " may have glory of men, verily, I say
 " unto you, they have their reward.
 " But when thou dost alms, let not thy 3.
 " left hand know what thy right hand
 " doeth; that thine alms may be in se- 4.
 " cret; and thy Father which seeth in
 " secret, himself shall reward thee o-
 " penly.
 " And when thou prayest, thou shalt 5.
 " not be as the hypocrites are; for they
 " love to pray standing in the Syna-
 " gogues, and in the corners of the
 " street, that they may be seen of men;
 " verily I say unto you, they have their
 " reward. But thou when thou prayest, 6.
 " enter into thy closet, and when thou
 " hast shut thy door, pray to thy Fa-
 " ther which is in secret; and thy Fa-
 " ther which seeth in secret, shall re-
 " ward thee openly. But when ye 7.
 " pray, use not vain repetitions, as the
 " heathen do: for they think that they
 " shall be heard for their much speak-
 " ing. Be not ye therefore like unto 8.
 " them; for your Father knoweth what
 " things ye have need of before ye ask
 " him. After this manner therefore 9.
 " pray ye.
 " Our Father which art in heaven, 10.
 " hallowed be thy name. Thy king-
 " dom come. Thy will be done in
 " earth as it is in heaven. Give us this 11
 " day our daily bread. And forgive us 12.
 " our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

Galilee.
Mat. vi.

13. " And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil ; for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. *Amen.* Anno Arat. 31. Ministr. 2.
14. " For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.
15. " Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance ; for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you they have their reward. But thou when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face ; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret ; and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.
16. " Lay not up for your selves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal. But lay up for your selves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.
17. " The light of the body is the eye : if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore

anno " therefore the light that is in thee be Galilee,
 Etar. 31. " darkness, how great is that dark- Mat. vi.
 linist. 2. " nefs !
 " No man can serve two masters : 24.
 " for either he will hate the one, and
 " love the other ; or else he will hold
 " to the one, and despise the other.
 " Ye cannot serve God and Mammon.
 " Therefore I say unto you, take no 25.
 " thought for your life, what ye shall
 " eat, or what ye shall drink ; nor for
 " your body, what ye shall put on : Is
 " not the life more than meat, and the
 " body than raiment ? Behold the fowls 26.
 " of the air ; for they sow not, neither
 " do they reap, nor gather into barns ;
 " yet your heavenly Father feedeth
 " them. Are ye not much better than
 " they ? Which of you by taking thought 27.
 " can add one cubit unto his stature ?
 " And why take ye thought for rai- 28.
 " ment ? Consider the lillies of the field
 " how they grow ; they toil not nei-
 " ther do they spin. And yet I say un- 29.
 " to you, that even Solomon in all his
 " glory was not arrayed like one of
 " those. Wherefore if God so cloath 30.
 " the grass of the field, which to day
 " is, and to morrow is cast into the
 " oven, shall be not much more cloath
 " you, O ye of little faith ? Therefore 31.
 " take no thought, saying, what shall
 " we eat ? or what shall we drink ? or
 " wherewithal shall we be clothed ?
 " (for after all these things do the Gen- 32.
 " tiles seek) for your heavenly Father
 " knoweth

- Galilee. " knoweth that ye have need of all Anno
 Mat. vi. 33. " these things. But seek ye first the ^{Mat. 3}
 " kingdom of God, and his righteou- ^{Minist. 2}
 " ness, and all these things shall be ad-
 34. " ded unto you. Take therefore no
 " thought for the morrow, for the
 " morrow shall take thought for the
 " things of it self: sufficient to the day
 " is the evil thereof.
- Euke vi. 37. " * Judge not, and ye shall not be ^{Mat. vii.}
 " judged; condemn not, and ye shall
 " not be condemned; forgive, and ye
 Mat. vii. 2. " shall be forgiven: * For with what
 " judgment ye judge, ye shall be judg-
 " ed; and with what measure ye mete,
 " it shall be measured to you again.
- Luke vi. 38. " * Give; and it shall be given unto
 " you; good measure pressed down, and
 " shaken together, and running over, shall
 " men give into your bosom. For with
 " the same measure that ye meet with-
 " al, it shall be measured to you a-
 " gain.
39. " And he spake a parable unto them,
 " Can the blind lead the blind? and
 " shall they not both fall into the ditch?
40. " The disciple is not above his master:
 " but every one that is perfect shall be
 " as his master.
41. " ^b And why beholdest thou the mote ^{b Mat. vii.}
 " that is in thy brother's eye, but per- ^{3, 4, 5.}
 " ceivest not the beam that is in thine
 42. " own eye? Either, how canst thou
 " say to thy brother, Brother, let me
 " pull out the mote that is in thine eye,
 " when thou thy self beholdest not the
 " beam

1180 " beam that is in thine own eye? Thou Galilee.
 121. 31. " hypocrite, cast out first the beam out 42. Luke vi.
 1211. 2. " of thine own eye, and then shalt thou
 " see clearly to pull out the mote that
 " is in thy brother's eye.
 " * Give not that which is holy unto 6. Mat. vii
 " dogs; neither cast ye your pearl be-
 " fore swine, lest they trample them
 " under their feet, and turn again and
 " rent you.
 " Ask and it shall be given you; seek 7.
 " and ye shall find; knock and it shall
 " be opened unto you. For every one
 " that asketh, receiveth; and he that 8.
 " seeketh, findeth; and to him that
 " knocketh, it shall be opened. Or 9.
 " what man is there of you, whom if
 " his Son ask bread, will he give him a
 " stone? Or if ask a fish, will he give 10.
 " him a serpent? If ye then being evil, 11.
 " know how to give good gifts unto
 " your children, how much more shall
 " your Father which is in heaven give
 " good things to them that ask him?
 12. " Therefore all things whatsoever * ye 12.
 " would that men should do to you, do
 " ye even so to them: for this is the
 " Law and the Prophets.
 " Enter ye in at the strait gate; for 13.
 " wide is the gate, and broad is the way
 " that leadeth to destruction, and many
 " there be which go in thereat. Be 14.
 " cause strait is the gate, and narrow is
 " the way which leadeth unto life, and
 " few there be that find it.

Luke vi.

" Beware

- Galilee. " Beware of false Prophets, which Anno
Mat. vii. 15. " come to you in sheep's cloathing, but Ætat. 3
16. " inwardly are ravening wolves. Ye Ministr.
" shall know them by their fruits:
Luke vi. 44. " * For every tree is known by his own
" fruit: * for of thorns men do not * Mat. v.
" gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush 16, 17.
43. " gather they grapes. For a good tree
" bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; nei-
" ther doth a corrupt tree bring forth
" good fruit.
Mat. vii. 18. " * A good tree cannot bring forth
" evil fruit; neither can a corrupt tree
19. " bring forth good fruit. Every tree
" that bringeth not forth good fruit, is
" hewn down and cast into the fire.
Luke vi. 45. " * A good man out of the good trea-
" sure of his heart, bringeth forth that
" which is good; and an evil man out
" of the evil treasure of his heart,
" bringeth forth that which is evil: for
" of the abundance of the heart his
Mat. vii. 20. " mouth speaketh. * Wherefore by
" their fruits ye shall know them.
21. " Not every one that saith unto me,
" Lord, Lord, shall enter into the king-
" dom of heaven; but he that doth the
" will of my Father which is in heaven.
22. " Many will say to me in that day,
" Lord, have we not prophesied in thy
" name? and in thy name have cast
" out devils? and in thy name have
" done many wonderful works? And
23. " then will I profess unto them, I ne-
" ver knew you; depart from me ye
Luke vi. 46. " that work iniquity. * And why call
" ye

30 " ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the Galilee.
 at. 31. " things which I say? *^a Whosoever com- 47. Luke vi.
 tist. 2. " eth to me, and heareth my sayings,
 lat. vii. " and doeth them, I will shew you to
 uke vi. " whom he is like. *^b I will liken 24. Mat. vii.
 " him unto a wise man *^c which built 48. Luke vi.
 lat. vii. " his house, and digged deep, and laid
 uke vi. " the foundation on a rock; *^d and 25. Mat. vii.
 49. " the rain descended, and the floods
 " came, and the winds blew, and beat
 " upon that house; and it fell not, for
 " it was founded upon a rock. And 26.
 " every one that heareth these sayings
 " of mine, and doeth them not, shall
 " be likened unto a foolish man which
 " built his house upon the sand: and 27.
 " the rain descended, and the floods
 " came, and the winds blew, and beat
 " upon that house; and it fell, and
 " great was the fall of it.

And it came to pass when Jesus had 28.
 ended these sayings, the people were
 astonished at his doctrine. For he 29.
 taught them as one having authority,
 and not as the Scribes.

Capernaum.

S E C T. XLVIII.

Anno
Æm. 37.
Misist 2.*Jesus cures the Centurion's Servant at
Capernaum.*

- Mat. viii. 1. **W**hen [*Jesus*] was come down
 Luke vii. 1. from the mountain, great mul-
 2. titudes follow'd him. * Now when he
 had ended all his sayings in the audi-
 3. ence of the people, he entred into Ca-
 pernaum. And a certain (a) Centurion's
 4. servant, who was dear unto him, was
 sick of the palfie, grievously tormented,
 * and ready to die. * And when he
 5. heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the el-
 6. ders of the Jews, beseeching him that
 he would come and heal his servant.
 7. And when they came to Jesus, they be-
 sought him instantly, saying, That he
 was worthy for whom he should do
 8. this. *For he loveth our nation; and hath*
 9. *built us a Synagogue.* ^b Then Jesus went ^b Mat. vii
 with them. And when he was now not
 10. far from the house, the Centurion sent
 friends to him, saying unto him, ^c Lord, ^c Mat. vii
 trouble not thy self, for I am not worthy
 11. that thou shouldest enter under my roof.
 12. Wherefore neither thought I myself wor-
 thy to come unto thee: ^d but say in a ^d Mat. vi
 word and my servant shall be healed. 8, 9, 10.
 13. For I also am a man set under authority,
 having Soldiers under me; and I say

(a) Centurion, an Officer in the Roman Army,
having the command of an hundred Men.

unto

unto one, go, and he goeth; and to another, come, and he cometh; and to my servant, do this, and he doth it.

When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that follow'd him, I say unto you, that I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

* And I say unto you, that many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

And Jesus said unto the Centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his Servant was healed in the self same hour. * And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the Servant whole that had been sick.

S E C T. XLIX.

Jesus restores life to the Son of the Widow of Naim.

AND it came to pass the day after, that [Jesus] went into a City called Naim; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. Now when he came nigh to the gate of the City, behold there was a dead man carried out, the only Son of his Mother, and she was a Widow; and much people

- Naim. ple of the City was with her. And Anno
 Luke vii. 13. when the Lord saw her, he had com- ^{Mat. 31.}
 passion on her, and said unto her, *weep* ^{Minist. 2.}
 14. *not.* And he came and touched the
 bier, (and they that bare him stood still)
 and he said, young man, *I say unto thee,*
 Miracle. 15. *Arise.* And he that was dead, sat up
 and began to speak: and he delivered
 him to his Mother.
 16. And there came a fear on all; and
 they glorified God, saying, that *a great*
prophet is risen up among us; and that
 17. *God hath visited his people.* And this ru-
 mour of him went forth throughout all
 Judea, and throughout all the region
 round about.

S E C T. L.

*John the Baptist being in prison, sends
 to Jesus to enquire who he was.
 Jesus does several Miracles before
 his Messengers. His discourses
 concerning John, &c.*

- Mat. xi. 2. **N**OW ^a when John had heard in the ^a Luke vii.
 Luke vii. 19. prison the works of Christ, ^{* cal.} 19.
 ling unto him ^b two of his disciples, sent ^b Mat. xi.
 20. *them* unto Jesus, saying, *Art thou he* ^{2, 3.}
that should come, or look we for another?
 21. And in that same hour he cured many of
 their infirmities, and plagues, and of
 evil Spirits; and unto many that were
 Miracle. 22. blind he gave sight. ^c Then Jesus an- ^c Mat. xi.
 swering, said unto them, *Go your way,* ^{4, 5, 6, 7,}
^{8, 9, 10, 11.}
and

10 and tell John what things ye have seen Galilee.
at. 31. and heard; how that the blind see, and Luke vii.
list. 2. the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed,
the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the
poor the Gospel is preached. And blessed 23.
is he whosoever shall not be offended in
me.

And when the messengers of John 24.
were departed, he began to speak unto
the people concerning John. "What
"went ye out into the wilderness for
"to see? A reed shaken with the wind?
"But what went ye out for to see? A 25.
"man clothed in soft raiment? Be-
"hold, they which are gorgeously ap-
"parelled, and live delicately, are in
"kings courts. But what went ye out 26.
"for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say
"unto you, and much more than a pro-
"phet. This is he of whom it is writ- 27.
"ten, [Malachi iii. 1.] Behold I send
"my messenger before thy face, which
"shall prepare thy way before thee. For 28.
"I say unto you, among those that are
"born of women, there is not a greater
"prophet than John the Baptist: but
"he that is least in the kingdom of
"God, is greater than he. * And from 12. Mat. xi.
"the days of John the Baptist, until
"now, the kingdom of heaven suffer-
"eth violence, and the violent take it
"by force. For all the Prophets, and 13.
"the Law prophesied until John. And if 14.
"ye will receive it, this is Elias which
"was for to come. He that has ears to 15.
"hear, let him hear.

G

* And

Galilee.
Luke vii.

* And all the people that heard *him*,
29. and the Publicans justified God, being
30. baptized with the baptism of John. But
the Pharisees and Lawyers rejected the
counsel of God against themselves, be-
ing not baptized by him.

Anno
Ætat.
Minist.

31. * And the Lord said, "Whereunto"
"then shall I liken the men of this ge-
"neration? and to what are they like?"
32. "They are like unto children sitting in
"the market-place, and calling one to
"another, and saying, we have piped
"unto you, and ye have not danced :
"we have mourned to you, and ye
33. "have not wept. For John the Baptist
"came neither eating bread nor drinking
34. "wine ; and ye say he has a devil. The
"Son of man is come eating and drink-
"ing ; and ye say, Behold, a glutton-
"ous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend
35. "of publicans and sinners. But wisdom
"is justified of all her children.

Mat.
16, 17,
19.

S E C T. LI.

*Jesus reproaches the Cities in which
he had done so many Miracles for
their Impenitence.*

Mat. xi.

20. **T**hen [Jesus] began to upbraid the
Cities wherein most of his mighty
works were done, because they repented
not.

21. "Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto
"thee Bethsaida : for if the mighty
"works

- o " works which were done in you, had Galilee.
 it. 31. " beendone in (a) Tyre and Sidon, they Mat. xi.
 ist. 2. " would have repented long ago in sack-
 " cloth and ashes. But I say unto you, 22.
 " it shall be more tolerable for Tyre
 " and Sidon at the day of judgment,
 " than for you.
 " And thou Capernaum which art 23.
 " exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought
 " down to hell: for if the mighty
 " works which have been done in thee,
 " had been done in Sodom, it would
 " have remained until this day. But I 24.
 " say unto you, that it shall be more
 " tolerable for the land of Sodom in
 " the day of judgment, than for thee.
 At that time Jesus answered and said, 25.
 " I thank thee, O Father, Lord of hea-
 " ven and earth, because thou hast hid
 " these things from the wise and pru-
 " dent, and hast revealed them unto
 " babes. Even so Father, for so it 26.
 " seemed good in thy sight.
 " All things are delivered unto me of 27.
 " my Father, and no man knoweth the
 " Son but the Father, neither knoweth
 " any man the Father save the Son,
 " and he to whomsoever the Son will
 " reveal him.
 " Come unto me all ye that labour 28.
 " and are heavy laden, and I will give
 " you rest. Take my yoke upon you, 29.
 " and learn of me, for I am meek and

(a) Tyre and Sidon, two Cities of the Gentiles
 bordering upon Canaan.

Galilee.
Mat. xl.

“ lowly in heart ; and ye shall find rest
“ unto your souls. For my yoke is ^{Anno}
“ easie, and my burden is light. ^{Eccl. Minist.}

S E C T. LII.

*Jesus is entertained in the house of a
Pharisee. His feet anointed by a
woman that had led an ill life.
Discourses thereupon.*

- Luke vii. 36. **A**ND one of the Pharisees desired
[Jesus] that he would eat with
him. And he went into the Pharisee's
house, and sat down to meat.
37. And behold a woman in the city,
which was a sinner, when she knew that
Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house,
brought an alabaster box of ointment.
38. And stood at his feet behind him weep-
ing, and began to wash his feet with
tears, and did wipe them with the hairs
of her head, and kissed his feet, and
39. anointed them with the ointment. Now
when the Pharisee which had bidden
him, saw it, he spake within himself,
saying, *This man, if he were a prophet,*
would have known who, and what man-
ner of woman this is that toucheth him :
40. *for she is a sinner.* And Jesus answer-
ing said unto him, *Simon, I have some-*
what to say unto thee ; and he saith,
41. *Master, say on.* “ There was a certain
“ creditor which had two debtors : the
“ one ought him five hundred pence,
“ and

no " and the other fifty. And when they Galilee.
 at. 31. " had nothing to pay, he frankly for- 42. Luke vii.
 ist. 2. " gave them both. Tell me therefore

" which of them will love him most.
 Simon answered and said, *I suppose* 43.
that he to whom he forgave most. And
 he said unto him, *thou hast rightly judged.*
 And he turned to the woman, and said 44.
 unto Simon, *Seest thou this woman? I*
entred into thine house, thou gavest me
no water for my feet: but she hath wash-
ed my feet with tears, and wiped them
with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest 45.
me no kiss: but this woman, since the
time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss
my feet. Mine head with oil thou dost 46.
not anoint; but this woman hath anointed
my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say 47.
unto thee, her sins, which are many, are
forgiven; for she loved much: but
to whom little is forgiven, the same
loveth little. And he said unto her, *Thy* 48.
sins are forgiven.

And they that sat at meat with him, 49.
 began to say within themselves, *Who is*
this that forgiveth sins also? And he said
 to the woman, *Thy faith hath saved thee,*
go in peace.

Galilee.
Luke viii.

S E C T. LIII.

Anno
Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.

Jesus preaches the Gospel in several Cities. Cures one that was possessed with a Devil blind and dumb. Jesus answers the calumny of the Pharisees, who said he did these things by Beelzebub.

1. **A**ND it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad-tidings of the kingdom of God : and the twelve were with him ;
2. and certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went
3. seven devils. And Joanna, the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministred unto him of their substance.
- Mat. xii. 22. * Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb :
Miracle. and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and
23. saw. And all the people were amazed, and said, *Is not this the Son of David ?* But when the Pharisees *
24. } and the Scribes which came down from
Mar. iii. 22 } Jerusalem * heard it, they said, *This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by*
- Mar. xii. 24. *Beelzebub the prince of the devils. * He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the*
- Mar. iii. 22. *devils casteth out devils. * * And Jesus*
- Mat. xii. 25. *knew* * Mar. iii. 23.

- Anno knew their thoughts, and said unto Galilee.
 Ætat. 31. unto them * in parables, " How can Sa- 23. Mar. iii.
 Minist. 2. " tan cast out Satan? * b Every king- 25. Mat. xii.
 b Mar. iii. " dom divided against it self is brought
 24, 25, 26. " to desolation; and every city or house
 " divided against it self, shall not stand.
 " And if Satan cast out Satan, he is di- 26.
 " vided against himself; how shall then
 " his kingdom stand? And if I by Beel- 27.
 " zebub cast out devils, by whom do
 " your children cast *them out*? therefore
 " they shall be your judges. But if I 28.
 " cast out devils by the Spirit of God,
 " then the kingdom of God is come
 " unto you.
 f Mat. xii. " * c No man can enter into a strong 27. Mar. iii.
 29. " man's house, and spoil his goods, ex-
 " cept he will first bind the strong man,
 " and then he will spoil his house. * He 30. Mat. xii.
 " that is not with me, is against me:
 " and he that gathereth not with me,
 d Mar. iii. " scattereth abroad. d Wherefore I say 31.
 28. " unto you, all manner of sin and blas-
 " phemy shall be forgiven unto men;
 " but the blasphemy *against* the holy
 " Ghost, it shall not be forgiven unto
 " men. And whosoever speaketh a 32.
 " word against the son of man, it shall
 e Mar. iii. " be forgiven him: * but whosoever
 29. " speaketh against the holy Ghost, it
 " shall not be forgiven him, neither in
 " this world, nor in the *world* to come.
 " * Because they said he has an unclean 30. Mar. iii.
 " Spirit.
 " * Either make the tree good, and 33. Mat. xii.
 " his fruit good; or else make the tree
 " corrupt,

Galilee.
Mat. xii.

- “ corrupt, and his fruit corrupt : for the tree is known by *his* fruit. Anno
Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.
34. “ O generation of vipers, how can
“ ye, being evil, speak good things ?
“ for out of the abundance of the heart,
35. “ the mouth speaketh. A good man
“ out of the good treasure of the heart,
“ bringeth forth good things ; and an
“ evil man out of the evil treasure,
36. “ bringeth forth evil things. But I say
“ unto you, that every idle word that
“ men shall speak, they shall give ac-
“ count thereof in the day of judgment.
37. “ For by thy words thou shalt be justi-
“ fied, and by thy words thou shalt be
“ condemned.
38. Then certain of the Scribes and Pha-
risees answered, saying, *Master, we*
39. *would see a (a) sign from thee.* But he
answered and said to them, “ An evil
“ and adulterous generation seeketh af-
“ ter a sign, and there shall no sign be
“ given to it, but the sign of the pro-
phet Jonas. For as Jonas was three
40. “ days and three nights in the whale’s
“ belly, so shall the Son of man be three
“ days and three nights in the heart of
41. “ the earth. The men of Niniveh shall
“ rise in judgment with this genera-
“ tion, and shall condemn it, be-
“ cause they repented at the preaching
“ of Jonas, and behold a greater than
“ Jonas is here.

(a) Sign, that is, Miracle.

“ The

- Anno " The Queen of the South shall rise Galilee.
 /Etat. 31. " up in judgment with this generation, 42. Mat. xii.
 Minist. 2. " and shall condemn it : for she came
 " from the uttermost parts of the earth
 " to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and
 " behold a greater than Solomon is
 " here.
 " When the unclean spirit is gone 43-
 " out of a man, he walketh through
 " dry places, seeking rest, and findeth
 " none. Then he saith, I will return 44-
 " into my house whence I came out ;
 " and when he is come, he findeth it
 " empty, swept and garnished. Then 45.
 " goeth he and taketh with himself se-
 " ven other spirits more wicked than
 " himself, and they enter in and dwell
 " there : and the last state of that man
 " is worse than the first. Even so shall
 " it be also unto this wicked genera-
 " tion.
 While he yet talked to the people, 46.
 * Mar. iii. * behold his mother and brethren stood
 31. without, desiring to speak with him,
 Luk.viii.19 * and the multitude sat about him, 32. Mar. iii.
 * and [they] could not come at him for 19. Luke viii.
 the press.
 * Mar. iii. * Then one said unto him, Behold 47. Mat. xii.
 32, 33, 34, thy mother and thy brethren stand with-
 35. out, desiring to speak with thee. But 48.
 Luke viii. he answered and said unto him that told
 20, 21. him, Who is my mother ? and, who are
 my brethren ? And he stretched forth 49-
 his hand towards his disciples, and said,
 Behold my mother and my brethren. For
 whosoever

Galilee. *whofoever shall do the will of my Father* Anno
 Mat. xii. 50. *which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.* *Ærat. 31. Minist. 2.*

S E C T. LIV.

Sea of Galilee. *Jesus speaks the Parable of the Sower to the multitudes out of a Ship; explains it to his Disciples; and several other Parables.*

- Mar. iv. 1. **T**HE same day went Jesus out of the house. * And he began again * Mat. xiii. to teach by the sea-side; and there were ^{1, 2.} gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude
- Luke viii. 4. was by the sea, on the land. * And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every
- Mar. iv. 2. city, * ^b he taught them many things ^b Mat. xiii. by parables, and said unto them in his ^{3, 4, 5, 6,} doctrine, " Hearken, behold there went ^{7, 8.}
4. " out a sower to sow : And it came to ^{Luk. viii. 4,} pass as he sowed, some fell by the ^{5, 6, 7, 8.}
5. " way side, * and it was trodden down,
- Luke viii. 5. } " and the fowls of the air came and de-
- Mar. iv. 4. } voured it up ; and some fell on stony
5. " ground where it had not much earth,
6. " and immediately it sprang up, because
6. " it had no depth of earth. But when
- Luke viii. 6. " the sun was up, it was scorched, * be-
- Mar. iv. 6. " cause it lacked moisture, * and be-
8. " cause it had no root, it withered a-
8. " way. And some fell among thorns,
- " and

- Anno " and the thorns grew up, and choaked Sea of Galilee.
 Ætat. 31. " it, and it yielded no fruit. And other
 Minist. 2. " fell on good ground, and did yield
 " fruit that sprang up and encreased,
 " and brought forth some thirty, and
 " some sixty, and some an hundred.
- * And when he had said these things, ^{8.} Luke viii.
 * Mat. xiii. he cried, *He that hath ears to hear, let*
 9. Mar. iv. 9. *him hear.*
- * And when he was alone, * his disci- ^{10.} Mar. iv.
 ciples * that were with him with the ^{9.} Luke viii.
 twelve, ^b asked of him, * *Why speakest* ^{9.} Mat. xiii.
^{10.} *thou to them in parables ? * What might* ^{9.} Luke viii.
^{Luk. viii. 9.} *this parable be ?* * And he said unto ^{11.} Mar. iv.
^c Mat. xiii. them, " Unto you it is given to know
^{11.} " the mystery of the kingdom of God :
^{Luk. viii. 10} " but unto them that are without, all
 " these these things are done in para-
 " bles : * For whosoever hath, to him ^{12.} Mat. xiii.
 " shall be given, and he shall have more
 " abundance : but whosoever hath not,
 " from him shall be taken away, even
 " that he hath. Therefore speak I to ¹³
 " them in parables. ^d That seeing they ^{12.} Mar. iv.
^{* Mat. xiii.} " may see, and not perceive ; and hear-
^{13.} " ing they may hear, and not under-
^{Luk. viii. 10} " stand ; lest at any time they should
 " be converted, and *their* sins should be
 " forgiven them. * And in them is ^{14.} Mat. xiii.
 " fulfilled the prophesie of Esaias [vi.
 " 9, 10.] which saith, *By hearing ye*
 " *shall hear, and shall not understand ;*
 " *and seeing ye shall see, and shall not*
 " *perceive. For this peoples heart* ^{15.}
 " *is waxed gross, and their ears are*
 " *dull of hearing, and their eyes they*
 " *have*

- Sea of Galilee. " *have closed; left at any time they* Anno
 Mat. xiii. " *should see with their eyes, and hear* ^{Ætat. 31.}
 " *with their ears, and should understand* ^{Minist. 2.}
 " *with their heart, and should be con-*
 16. " *verted, and I should heal them. But*
 17. " *blessed are your eyes, for they see;*
 " *and your ears, for they hear. For*
 " *verily I say unto you, that many pro-*
 " *phets and righteous men have desired*
 " *to see those things which ye see,*
 " *and have not seen them; and to hear*
 " *those things which ye hear, and have*
 Mar. iv. 13. " *not heard them. * And he said unto*
 " *them, know ye not this parable? and*
 " *how then will ye know all parables?*
 Mat. xiii. 18. " ** * Hear ye therefore the parable of* Luke viii.
 " *the sower. * The seed is the word* 11.
 Luke viii. 11. " *of God. * The sower soweth the*
 Mar. iv. 14. } " *word. * ^b When any one heareth the* Mar. iv.
 Mat. xiii. 19. } " *word of the kingdom, and under-* 15, 16, 17,
 " *standeth it not, then cometh the wic-* 18, 19.
 " *ked one, and catcheth away that* Luke viii.
 " *which was sown in his heart, * left* 12, 13, 14.
 Luke viii. 12. " *[he] should believe and be saved.*
 " ** This is he which received the seed*
 Mat. xiii. 19. " *by the way side.*
 20. " *But he that received the seed into*
 " *stony places, the same is he that hear-*
 " *eth the word, and anon with joy re-*
 21. " *ceiveth it: yet hath he not root in*
 " *himself, but dureth for a while: for*
 " *when tribulation or persecution ariseth*
 " *because of the word, by and by he is*
 " *offended.*

" He

- Anno
Ætat. 31. " He also that received seed among Sea of Galilee.
Minist. 2. " the thorns, is he that heareth the 22. Mat. xiii. :
" word; and the care of this world,
" and the deceitfulness of riches, * and 19. Mar. iv.
" the lusts of other things entring in,
" choke the word, and it becometh un-
" fruitful. * But he that received seed 23. Mat. xiii.
" into the good ground, is he that hear-
" eth the word and understandeth it,
" which also beareth fruit, and bringeth
" forth some an hundred fold, some fix-
" ty, some thirty.
- ^b Mar. iv. * And he said unto them, ^b " No man { 21. Mar. iv.
21. " when he hath lighted a candle, co- { 16. Luk. viii.
" vereth it with a vessel, or putteth it
" under a bed; but setteth it on a can-
" dlestick, that they which enter in may
" see the light. * For nothing is secret 17.
" that shall not be made manifest; nei-
" ther any thing hid, that shall not be
" made known and come abroad. * If 23. Mar. iv.
" any man have ears to hear, let him
" hear. And he said unto them, 24.
" Take heed what ye hear: with what
" measure ye mete, it shall be measured
" to you: and unto you that hear shall
" more be given. * ^d Take heed there- 18. Luke viii.
^d Mar. iv. " fore how ye hear: for whosoever hath,
25. " to him shall be given; and whoso-
" ever hath not, from him shall be ta-
" ken even that which he seemeth to
" have.
- * Another parable put [*Jesus*] forth 24. Mat. xiii.
unto them, saying, " The kingdom of
" heaven is likened unto a man which
" sowed good seed in his field. But
" while

- Sea of Galilee. " while men slept, his enemy came Anno
xiii. Mat. 25. " and sowed tares among the wheat, Ætat. 31.
 26. " and went his way. But when the blade Minist. 2.
 " was sprung up, and brought forth
 " fruit, then appeared the tares also.
 27. " So the servants of the householder
 " came and said unto him, Sir, didst not
 " thou sow good seed in thy field? from
 28. " whence then hath it tares? He said
 " unto them, an enemy hath done this.
 " The servants said unto him, Wilt
 " thou then that we go and gather them
 29. " up? But he said nay; lest while ye
 " gather up the tares, ye root up also
 30. " the wheat with them. Let both grow
 " together until the harvest; and in
 " the time of harvest I will say to the
 " reapers, Gather ye together first the
 " tares, and bind them in bundles to
 " burn them, but gather the wheat into
 " my barn.
Mar. iv. 26. * And he said, " So is the kingdom
 " of God, as if a man should cast seed
 27. " into the ground, and should sleep, and
 " rise night and day, and the seed should
 " spring and grow up, he knoweth not
 28. " how. For the earth bringeth forth
 " fruit of her self, first the blade, then
 " the ear, after that the full corn in the
 29. " ear. But when the fruit is brought
 " forth, immediately he putteth in the
 " sickle, because the harvest is come.
Mat. xiii. 31. * Another parable put he forth unto * Mar. iv
Mar. iv. 30. them, saying, " * Whereunto shall we 30.
 " liken the kingdom of God? or with
 " what comparison shall we compare it?
 * The

- Anno " * The kingdom of heaven ^a is like to Galilee.
- Ætat. 31. " a grain of mustard-seed, which a man 31. Mat. xiii.
- Minist. 2. " took and sowed in his field; * ^b which 31. Mat. iv.
- *Mar.iv.31. " when it is sown in the earth, is less
- ^b Mat. xiii. " than all the seeds that be in the earth.
32. " But when it is sown, it groweth up 32.
- " and becometh greater than all herbs,
- " and shooteth out great branches, * and 32. Mat. xiii.
- " becometh a great tree : ^c so that the
- *Mar.iv.32. " birds of the air come and lodge in the
- " branches thereof.
- Another parable spake he unto them. 33.
- " The kingdom of heaven is like unto
- " leaven which a woman took and hid
- " in three measures of meal, till the
- " whole was leavened.
- ^d Mat. xiii. " * ^d And with many such parables 33. Mar. iv.
34. spake he the word unto them as they
- were able to hear *it*. But without a 34.
- parable spake he not unto them. And
- when they were alone, he expounded all
- things to his disciples. * That it might
- be fulfilled which was spoken by the
- prophet [*Psal. lxxviii. 2.*] saying, *I will*
- open my mouth in parables, I will utter*
- things that have been kept secret from*
- the foundation of the world.*
- Then Jesus sent the multitude away, 36. Mat. xiii.
- and went into the house : and his disci-
- ples came unto him, saying, *Declare*
- unto us the parable of the tares of the*
- field.*
- He answered and said unto them, 37.
- " He that soweth the good seed, is the
- " Son of man : the field is the world : 38.
- " the good seed are the children of the
- " kingdom ;

Galilee.

xiii. Mat.

39. " kingdom ; but the tares are the chil- Anno
 " dren of the wicked one : the enemy *Act. 31.*
 " that sowed them is the devil : the har- *Minist. 2.*
 " vest is the end of the world ; and the
 40. " reapers are the angels. As therefore
 " the tares are gathered and burnt in the
 " fire ; so shall it be in the end of this
 41. " world. The Son of man shall send
 " forth his angels, and they shall ga-
 " ther out of his kingdom all things
 " that offend, and them which do ini-
 42. " quity : and shall cast them into a fur-
 " nace of fire : there shall be wailing
 " and gnashing of teeth.
 43. " Then shall the righteous shine forth
 " as the sun in the kingdom of their
 " Father. Who hath ears to hear, let
 " him hear.
 144. " Again, " The kingdom of heaven is
 " like unto treasure hid in a field ; the
 " which when a man hath found, he
 " hideth, and for joy thereof, goeth
 " and selleth all that he hath and buy-
 " eth that field.
 45. " Again, " The kingdom of heaven is
 " like unto a merchant-man, seeking
 46. " goodly pearls : who when he had
 " found one pearl of great price, he
 " went and sold all that he had, and
 " bought it.
 47. " Again, " The kingdom of heaven is
 " like unto a net that was cast into the
 " sea, and gathered of every kind.
 48. " Which when it was full, they drew
 " to shore, and sat down, and gathered
 " the good into vessels, but cast the bad
 " away.

Anno " away. So shall it be at the end of the Galilee.
 Ætat. 31. " world : the angels shall come forth, 49. Mat. xiii.
 Minist. 2. " and sever the wicked from among the
 " just. And shall cast them into the 50.
 " furnace of fire: there shall be wailing
 " and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus saith unto them, *Have ye not 51.
 understood all these things?* They say
 unto him, *Yea, Lord.* Then said he 52.
 unto them, *Therefore every Scribe which
 is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven,
 is like unto a man that is an householder,
 which bringeth forth out of his treasure
 things new and old.*

And it came to pass, that when Jesus 53.
 had finished these parables, he departed
 thence.

S E C T. LV.

*Jesus goes into a Ship with his disci-
 ples ; there ariseth a Storm, which
 he layeth.*

NOW it came to pass on a certain 22. Luk. viii.
 day, that [*Jesus*] went into a Ship
 with his disciples. *And the same day, 35. Mar. iv.
 when even was come, [*and*] * Jesus saw 18. Mat. viii.
 great multitudes about him, * he said 22. Luk. viii.
 unto them, * *Let us go over unto the
 other side of the Lake.*

* Mat. viii. 18.
 Mar. iv. 35. * And a certain Scribe came, and said 19. Mat. viii.
 unto him, *Master, I will follow thee
 whithersoever thou goest.* And Jesus 20.
 saith unto him, *The foxes have holes,
 and the birds of the air have nests ; but*

H the

- Sea of Galilee, *the son of man hath not where to lay his* Anno
 or Lake of *head.* *Ætat. 31.*
 Tyberias. *Minist. 2.*
 Mat. viii. 21. And another of his disciples said un-
 to him, *Lord suffer me first to go and*
bury my Father. But Jesus said unto
 him, *Follow me, and let the dead bury*
their dead.
- Mar. iv. 36. * And when they had sent away the
 multitude they took him, even as he
 Mat. viii. 23. was in the ship: * And when he was
 entred into a ship his disciples followed
 Luk. viii. 22. him. * And they launched forth, * and
 Mar. iv. 36. there were also with him other little ships.
 Mat. viii. 24. *^b and behold there arose a great *^c storm ^b Mar. iv.
 Mar. iv. 37. of wind, and the waves beat into the ship ^{37.}
 *^d infomuch that the ship was cover'd ^{Luke viii.}
 Mat. viii. 24. with the waves: * and [*they*] were in ^{23.}
 Luke viii. 23. jeopardy. *^e And [*Jesus*] was in the ^c Mat. viii.
 Mar. iv. 38. hinder part of the ship asleep on a pil- ^{24.}
 low: * And his disciples came to him ^d Mar. iv.
 Mat. viii. 25. and awoke him, saying, * *Master ca-* ^{37.}
 Mar. iv. 38. *rest thou not that we perish?* And he ^{Luke viii.}
 39. arose and rebuked the wind, and said ^{23.}
 unto the sea, *Peace, be still:* and the ^e Mat. viii.
 Miracle. wind ceased, and there was a great calm. ^{24, 25, 26.}
 Luke viii. ^{23, 24, 25.}
 40. And he said unto them, *Why are ye so*
fearful? how is it that ye have no faith?
 41. } And they feared exceedingly and *^f won- ^f Mat. viii.
 Luk. viii. 25. } dred, saying one to another, *what man-* ^{26, 27.}
ner of man is this? for he commandeth ^{Mar. iv. 41.}
even the winds and water [and] *^g *the* ^g Luke viii.
winds and sea obey him? ^{25.}

Anno
Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.

Gadara.

S E C T. LVI.

Jesus goes into the Country of the Gadarenes, one possessed with devils meets him, he casteth them out, they go into a Herd of Swine.

^a Mat. viii. ⁴ AND they came over unto the ^{1. Mar. v.}
^{28.} other side of the sea, into the
^{Luk. viii.} country of the Gadarenes * which is ^{26. Luk. 8.}
^{26.} over against Galilee: * and when he was ^{2. Mar. v.}
came out of the ship, immediately there
met him out of the tombs * a certain ^{27. Luk. viii.}
man which had devils a long time, and
^b Mar. v. 3: ^{ware} no cloths, ^b neither abode in any
house, but in the tombs, * and no man ^{3. Mar. v.}
could bind him, no not with chains: * ^{28. Mat. viii.}
exceeding fierce, so that no man might
pass by that way. * Because that he ^{4. Mar. v.}
had been often bound with fetters and
chains, and the chains had been pluck-
ed asunder by him, and the fetters bro-
ken in pieces: neither could any man
tame him. And always night and day ^{5.}
he was in the mountains and in the
tombs, crying and cutting himself
^c Luk. viii. ^{28.} with stones. ^c But when he saw Jesus ^{6.}
^a Mat. viii. ^{29.} far off, he ran and worshipped him [and] ^{28. Luk. viii.}
^{Luk. viii.} * fell down before him, * ^{7. Mar. v.} ^a and cried with
^{28.} a loud voice, and said, *what have I to
do with thee, Jesus, thou son of the most
high God? I adjure thee, by God, that
thou torment me not. * Art thou come*

H 2 *hither*

- Gadara. *hither to torment us before our time?* Anno
 Mat. viii. 29. * For he had commanded the unclean *Ætat. 31.*
 Luk. viii. 29. spirit to come out of the man. (For *Minist. 2.*
 oftentimes it had caught him and he *Mar. v. 8.*
 was kept bound with chains and in fet-
 ters; and he brake the bands, and was
 driven of the devil into the wilderness)
 30. And Jesus asked him saying, *what is thy*
name? * And he answered saying, *my* *Luk. viii.*
 Mar. viii. 9. *name is Legion: for we are many:* * be- *30.*
 Luk. viii. 30. *cause many devils were entred into him.*
 31. * And they besought him * much * that *Mar. v. 10.*
 Mar. v. 10. } he would not command them * away out
 Luk. viii. 31. } of the country * to go out into the deep:
 Mar. v. 10. * *and there was a good way off from* *Mar. v. 11.*
 Luk. viii. 31. them * nigh to the mountains *a great* *Luk. viii.*
 Mat. viii. 30. herd of swine feeding, and all the de- *32.*
 Mar. v. 11. vils besought him saying, * *if thou cast* *Mat. viii. 1*
 Mat. viii. 31. *us out, suffer us to go into the herd of* *30. 31.*
 Mar. v. 13. *swine.* * And forthwith Jesus gave *Mar. v. 12*
 Miracle. them leave. * And he said unto them,
 Mat. viii. 32. } *Go.* * *Then went the devils out of* *Mat. viii.*
 Luk. viii. 33. } the man and entred into the swine, *32.*
 Mat. viii. 32. * *and behold the whole herd of swine* *Mar. v. 13.*
 Mar. v. 13. ran violently down a steep place into *Mar. v. 13.*
 the sea * and were choked in the sea, *33, 34, 35.*
 14. (they were about two thousand) and
 Mar. viii. 33. they that fed the swine fled, * and went
 their ways into the city, and told every
 Mar. v. 14. thing * in the city and in the country,
 Mat. viii. 33. * and what was befallen to the possessed
 Mar. v. 14. of the devils. * And they went out to see
 15. what it was that was done, and they
 come to Jesus and see him that was
 possessed with the devils and had the
 Luk. viii. 35. Legion, * *sitting at the feet of Jesus,* *Mar. v. 15,*
cloathed *15.*

Anno cloathed and in his right mind, and they Gadara.
 Ætat. 31. were afraid. They also which saw it 36. Luk. viii.
 Minist. 2. told them by what means he that was
 possessed of the devils was healed, * and 16. Mar. v.
 also concerning the swine; * and behold 34. Mar. viii;
 the whole city [*and*] * the whole mul- 37. Luk. viii,
 titude of the country of the Gadarenes
 round about * came out to meet Jesus; 34. Mar. viii.
 °Mar.v.17. and when they saw him, °they besought
 Luk. viii. him that he would depart out of their
 37. coasts * for they were taken with great
 fear: and he went up into the ship and
 returned back again. * And when he 18. Mar. v.
 ° Luk. viii. was come into the ship, ° he that had
 38, 39. been possessed with devils, prayed him
 that he might be with him. Howbeit, 19.
 Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto
 him, go home to thy friends, and tell
 them how great things the Lord hath
 done for thee, and hath had compassion
 on thee.

And he departed, and began to pub-
 lish in Decapolis, how great things Je-
 sus had done for him.

SECT. LVII.

*Jesus cureth a Woman troubled with
 a flux of blood, and bringeth to
 life Jairus's Daughter.* Galilee near
 the Sea.

* Luk. viii. * **A**ND when Jesus was passed over 21. Mar. v.
 40. again by ship unto the other side
 much people gathered unto him, * for 40. Luk. viii.
 they were all waiting for him * and he 21. Mar. v.

- Galilee near the Sea. * While he spake these things unto them * behold there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him * he fell down at Jesus feet * and worshipped him * and besought him greatly * that he would come in to his House: * saying, *My little daughter lieth at the point of death*, (* For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying) * *I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall live.* * And Jesus arose and followed him, and so did his disciples, * and much people followed him and thronged him, * (and behold a woman which was diseas'd with an issue of blood twelve years, * and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse. When she had heard of Jesus, * came in the press behind, and touched his garment: * for she said within herself, *If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.* * And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up, and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague * from that hour. * And Jesus immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press and said, *Who touched my cloths?* * When all denied, Peter * and his disciples * that were with him said, *Matter, * Thou seest*
- Mat. ix. 18.
Mar. v. 22.
Luk. viii. 41.
Mat. ix. 18.
Mar. v. 23.
Luk. viii. 41.
Mar. v. 23.
Luk. viii. 42.
Mar. v. 23.
Mat. ix. 19.
Mar. v. 25.
Mat. ix. 20.
Mar. v. 26.
Mat. ix. 22.
Mar. v. 30.
Miracle.
Luk. viii. 45.
Mar. v. 31.
Luk. viii. 45.
Mar. v. 31.
- Anno. Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.
Mar. v. 22.
Luk. viii.
Mat. ix.
18.
Mar. v. 24.
Luk. viii.
Mar. v. 25.
Luk. viii.
Mar. v. 22.
Luk. viii.
Mat. ix. 22.

Anno *seest* * ⁿ *the multitude throng thee and* Galilee. near
 Ætat. 31. *press thee, and sayest thou, who touched* the Sea.
 Minist. 2. *me?* And Jesus said, *some body hath* 45. Luk. viii.
 * Mar. v. 31. *touched me: for I perceive that virtue* 46.
is gone out of me. * And he looked 32. Mar. v.
 round to see her that had done this
 * Mar. v. 33. *thing.* * And when the woman saw that 47. Luk. viii.
she was not hid, she came trembling, and
falling down before him, she declared
unto him before all the people for what
cause she had touched him, and how
she was healed immediately. * But 22. Mat. ix.
 Jesus turned him about, and when he
 * Mar. v. 34. *saw her,* * he said, *Daughter be of good*
 Luk. viii. *comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole;*
 48. ** go in peace and be whole of thy plague.* 34. Mar. v.
 * Mar. v. 35. ** While he yet spake, there cometh* 49. Luk. viii.
one from the ruler of the synagogue's
house, saying to him, Thy daughter is
 * Luk. viii. *dead, * why troublest thou the Master any* 35. Mar. v.
 50. *farther?* * As soon as Jesus heard the 36.
word that was spoken, he saith unto
the ruler of the synagogue, Be not af-
*fraid, only believe * and she shall be made* 49. Luk. viii.
 * Luk. viii. *whole.* * And when Jesus came into 23. Mat. ix.
 51. *the * house of the ruler of the syna-* { 38. Mar. v.
gogue he suffered no man to follow { 37.
him, save Peter, and James, and John,
*the brother of James, * and the father* 51. Luk. viii.
*and mother of the maiden, * And [when* 23. Mat. ix.
he] saw the people and the minstrels
*making a noise, * the tumult, and them* 38. Mar. v.
 * Luk. viii. *that wept and wailed greatly. And*
 52. *when he was come in, he saith unto* 39.
them, Why make ye this ado and weep?
** Give place, for the maid is not dead but* 24. Mat. ix.
sleepeth.

- Galilee, near the Sea. Capernaum Jairus's house. Mar. v. 40. *sleepth.* * And they laughed him to scorn. Anno Ætat. 31. Minist. 2. * * But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, *Talitha cumi*, which is being interpreted *Damsel arise*: * and her spirit came again, * and she arose straightway * and walked, for she was of the age of twelve years: * and he commanded * that something should be given her to eat. * * And her parents were astonished, * with a great astonishment, * but he charged them straitly that they should tell no man what was done. * And the fame thereof went abroad into all that land.
- Miracle. Luk. viii. 55. (I say unto thee) arise: * and her spirit came again, * and she arose straightway * and walked, for she was of the age of twelve years: * and he commanded * that something should be given her to eat. * * And her parents were astonished, * with a great astonishment, * but he charged them straitly that they should tell no man what was done. * And the fame thereof went abroad into all that land.
- Mar. v. 42. }
Luk. viii. 56. }
- Mar. ix. 26. * And the fame thereof went abroad into all that land.

S E C T. LVIII.

Capernaum. *Jesus cureth two that were blind.*

- Mat. ix. 27. **A**ND when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, *Thou son of David, have mercy on us.* And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, *Believe ye that I am able to do this?* They said unto him, *yea Lord.* Then touched he their eyes, saying, *According to your faith, be it unto you.* And their eyes were opened: and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, *See that no man knows*
- Miracle. 30.

Anno *know it.* But they when they were de- Capernaum.
 Ætat. 31. parted, spread abroad his fame in all 31. Mat. ix.
 Minist. 2. that country.

S E C T. LIX.

*Jesus cureth one that was dumb and
 possessed with a Devil.*

AS they went out, behold they 32. Mat. ix.
 brought to him a dumb man pos-
 sessed with a devil. And when the de-
 vil was cast out, the dumb spake: and 33. Miracle.
 the multitudes marvelled, saying, *It*
was never so seen in Israel. But the 34.
 Pharisees said, *He casteth out devils*
through the prince of the devils.

S E C T. LX.

*Jesus goes to Nazareth, is despised of Nazareth.
 his countrymen because of his mean
 condition.*

* Mat. xiii.
 54.

AND [*Jesus*] went out from 1. Mar. vi.
 thence and came into his own
 country, and his disciples follow'd him.
 And when the sabbath day was come, 2.
 he began to teach in the synagogue, and
 many hearing him were astonished, say-
 ing, *From whence hath this man these*
things? and what wisdom is this which
is given unto him, that even such mighty
 3. Mar. vi. 3. *works are wrought by his hands? ** 55. Mat. xiii.
Is not this the carpenter's son? Is not his
mother

- Nazareth. *mother called Mary? and his brethren* Anno
James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? Act. 31.
 Mat. xlii. 56. *And his Sisters, are they not all with us?* Minist. 2.
 Mar. vi. 3. *whence then hath this man all these* Mat. xlii
 4. *things?* * And they were offended 57, 58.
 at him. But Jesus said unto them, *A*
prophet is not without honour, but in his
own country, and among his own Kin,
and in his own house.
 5. And he could there do no mighty
 work, save that he laid his hands upon
 a few sick folk, and healed *them*. And
 he marvelled because of their unbelief.
- Miracle.

S E C T. LXI.

Galilee.

*Jesus goes and teaches about the Cities
 and Villages and heals all sicknesses.*

- Mat. ix. 35. ^d **A**ND Jesus went about all the ci- ^d Mar. vi. 6
 ties and villages teaching in their
 synagogues, and preaching the gospel
 of the kingdom, and healing every sick-
 36. ness and every disease among the people.
 But when he saw the multitudes he
 was moved with compassion on them,
 because they fainted, and were scattered
 37. abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.
 Then saith he unto his disciples, *The*
 38. *harvest truly is plenteous, but the labour-*
ers are few; pray ye therefore the Lord
of the harvest, that he will send forth
labourers into his harvest.

Anno
Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.

Galilee,

S E C T. LXII.

Jesus sends out the twelve Apostles to preach the Gospel, and to heal Diseases and cast out Devils.

* Mat. x. 1. **T**HEN [*Jesus*] called his twelve ^{1. Luk. ix.}
disciples together, and gave them

power and authority over all devils
[and] * unclean spirits, to cast them ^{1. Mat. x.}

^{b Luk. ix. 1.} out, ^b and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

Now the names of the twelve Apo- ^{2.}

stles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother,

James *the son* of Zebedee, and John

his brother, Philip and Bartholomew, ^{3.}

Thomas, and Matthew the publican,

James *the son* of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus,

whose surname was Thaddeus, Simon ^{4.}

the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who ^{5.}

^{c Mar. vi. 7.} also betrayed him. ^c These twelve Je- ^{7. Mar. vi.}
^{Luk. ix. 2.} sus sent forth, * two by two, * and com- ^{5. Mat. x.}

manded them saying, *Go not into the*

way of the Gentiles, and into any city

of the Samaritans enter ye not. But go ^{6.}

rather to the lost sheep of the house of

Israel * *to preach the kingdom of God.* ^{2. Luk. ix.}

* *And as ye go, preach, saying, The king-* ^{7. Mat. x.}

dom of heaven is at hand. * *Heal the sick,* ^{8.}

cleanse the Lepers, raise the dead, cast

out devils, freely ye have received, free-

ly give. * ^{f Luk. ix. 3.} And he commanded them ^{8. Mar. vi.}

that they should take nothing for their

journey,

- Galilee. journey, save a staff only, [*saying*] Anno
 Mat. x. 9. * Provide neither gold nor silver, nor *Ætat. 3¹*
 10. brass in your purses: Nor scrip for your *Minist. 2*
 journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, *Mar. vi.*
 Mar. vi. 9. nor staves: * But be shod with sandals,
 Mat. x. 10. and not put on two coats (* for the
 workman is worthy of his meat.) And
 11. } into whatsoever city or town, * and what-
 Luk. ix. 4. }
 Mat. x. 11. } soever house ye enter into, * enquire
 Mar. vi. 10. } who in it is worthy; and * ^h there abide *Mar. x. 11*
 till ye depart from that place. *Luk. ix. 4*
 Mat. x. 12. " * And when ye come into an house,
 13. " salute it, and if the house be worthy
 " let your peace come upon it; but if
 " it be not worthy, let your peace re-
 14. " turn to you: and whosoever shall *Mar. vi. 11*
 " not receive you, nor hear your words, *Luk. ix. 5*
 " when ye depart out of that house or
 Mar. vi. 11. } " city, shake off the dust of your feet
 Mat. x. 15. } " * for a testimony against them. * * Ve- *Mar. vi. 11*
 " rily I say unto you, it shall be more
 " tolerable for the land of Sodom and
 " Gomorrah in the day of judgment,
 " than for that city.
 Mat. ix. 16. " Behold, I send you forth as sheep
 " in the midst of wolves: be ye there-
 " fore wise as serpents, and harmless
 17. " as doves. But beware of men, for
 " they will deliver you up to the coun-
 " cels, and they shall scourge you in
 18. " their synagogues. And ye shall be
 " brought before governours and kings
 " for my sake, for a testimony against
 19. " them and the Gentiles. But when
 " they deliver you up, take no thought
 " how or what ye shall speak: for it
 " shall

Anno. " shall be given you in that same hour Galilee.
 Stat. 31. " what ye shall speak. For it is not 20. Mat. x.
 Misst. 2. " ye that speak, but the spirit of your
 " Father which speaketh in you. And
 " the brother shall deliver up the bro- 21.
 " ther to death, and the father the
 " child; and the children shall rise up
 " against *their* parents, and cause them
 " to be put to death. And ye shall be 22.
 " hated of all men for my names sake,
 " but he that endureth to the end,
 " shall be saved. But when they per- 23.
 " secute you in this city, flee ye into ano-
 " ther: for verily I say unto you, ye
 " shall not have gone over the cities of
 " Israel, 'till the son of man be come.
 " The disciple is not above *his* Ma- 24.
 " ster, nor the servant above his Lord.
 " It is enough for the disciple that he 25.
 " be as his Master, and the servant as
 " his Lord: if they have called the
 " Master of the house Beelzebub, how
 " much more *shall they call* them of his
 " household? Fear them not therefore, 26.
 " for there is nothing covered, that
 " shall not be revealed; and hid that
 " shall not be known. What I tell you 27.
 " in darkness, *that* speak ye in light:
 " and what ye hear in the ear, *that*
 " preach ye upon the house tops. And 28.
 " fear not them which kill the body,
 " but are not able to kill the soul: but
 " rather fear him which is able to
 " destroy both soul and body in
 " hell.

" Are

Galilee.
Mat. x.

29. " Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbred. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.
30. " Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a mans foes *shall be* they of his own household.
31. " He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me, and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me; and he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.
32. " He that receiveth you, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward;

Anno
Ætat. 31.
Minist. 2.

10. "ward; and he that receiveth a righ- Galilee.
 11. 31. "teous man, in the name of a righteous
 11. 2. "man, shall receive a righteous man's
 "reward. And whosoever shall give 42. Mat. x.
 "to drink unto one of these little ones
 "a cup of cold water only, in the name
 "of a disciple, verily I say unto you,
 "he shall in no wise lose his reward.

And it came to pass when Jesus had 1. Mat. xi.
 made an end of commanding his twelve
 disciples, he departed thence to teach
 1. vi. 12. and preach in their cities. *¹ And they 12. Luk. ix.
 departed and went through the towns,
 preaching the gospel, * and preached 12. Mar. vi.
 that men should repent. And they cast 13.
 out many devils, and anointed with oyl
 k. ix. vi. many that were sick, ^m and healed *them*.

*The end of the second year of Christ's
 Ministry.*

S E C T. LXIII.

D
 L. 32. *John the Baptist beheaded by Herod.*
 ft. 3.

r. xiv. * **A**ND when a convenient time was 21. Mar. vi.
 come, that Herod on his birth
 day made a supper to his lords, high
 captains and chief estates of Galilee:
 r. vi. * * The daughter of Herodias * came in 6. Mar. xiv.
 and danced * before them, and pleased 22. Mar. vi.
 Herod, * and them that sat with him. { 6. Mat. xiv.
 The king said unto the damsel, *Ask of* 22. Mar. vi.
me whatsoever thou wilt and I will give
 xiv. 7. *it thee.* * And he sware unto her, *What-*
soever

- Galilee. *soever thou shalt ask of me, I will give* Anno
 Mar. vi. 23. *it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.* *Acac. 3*
 24. And she went forth, and said unto her *Missit.*
 mother, *What shall I ask?* and she said
 Mat. xiv. 8. *The head of John the Baptist.* * And
 she being before instructed of her mother
 Mar. vi. 25. * she came in straightway with haste
 unto the king, and asked saying, *I^d Mat. x*
will that thou give me by and by in a 8, 9.
charger, the head of John the Baptist.
 26. And the king was exceeding sorry; * ne-
 Mat. xiv. 9. vertheless for * his oaths sake, and for
 Mar. vi. 26. their sakes which sat with him * at meat
 Mat. xiv. 9. * he would not reject her, [and] * he
 Mar. vi. 26. commanded it to be given her. *^c And ^cMat. xiv
 Mat. xiv. 9. 27. immediately the king sent an execution- 10.
 Mar. vi. 27. ner, and commanded his head to be
 brought: and he went and beheaded him
 28. in the prison, ^fand brought his head in ^fMar. xiv
 a charger, and gave it to the damsel, 11, 12.
 and the damsel gave it to her mother.
 29. And when his disciples heard of it, they
 came and took up his corps, and laid
 Mat. xiv. 12. it in a tomb, * and went and told Je-
 sus.

S E C T. LXIV.

The opinion of Herod and his Courtiers concerning Jesus.

- Mat. xiv. 1. ^a **A**T that time Herod the Tetrarch ^aMar. vi
 Mar. vi. 14. heard of the fame of Jesus * (for ^{14.}
 Luk. ix. 7. his name was spread abroad) * and he ^{Luk. ix.}
 Mat. xiv. 2. was perplexed, * and said unto his ser-
 vants, *This is John the Baptist, he is*
risen

Anno *risen from the dead, and therefore might* Galilee.
 Eccl. 32. *ty works do shew forth themselves in him.*
 Minist. 3. * Others said, *That it is Elias.* * And 15. Mar. vi.
 Luk. ix. 8. others said, *That it is a prophet, or as*
*one of the prophets, * that one of the old* 8. Luk. ix.
prophets was risen again. * But when 16. Mar. vi.
 Herod heard thereof, he said, * *John have* 9. Luk. ix.
I beheaded: but who is this of whom I
hear such things? * *It is John whom I* 16. Mar. vi.
beheaded, he is risen from the dead; 9. Luk. ix.
 * and he desired to see him.

S E C T. LXV.

The Apostles return to Jesus, he feedeth five thousand with five Barley Loaves and two Fishes.

* **A**ND the Apostles gathered them- 30. Mar. vi.
 selves together unto Jesus, and
 told him all things, both what they had
 done, and what they had taught. And 31.
 he said unto them, *Come ye your selves*
apart into a desert place, and rest a
while: for there were many coming and
going, and they had no leisure so much
 as to eat. * And they departed into a 32.
 desert place by ship privately, * belong- 10. Luk. ix.
 ing to the city called Bethsaida, * over 1. Joh. vi.
 the Sea of Galilee, *which is the sea of* Near Beth-
 Tiberias. * And the people saw 33. Mar. vi.
 them departing, and many knew him,
 and ran a foot thither out of all cities,
 and out-went them, and came together
 to him, * because they saw his miracles 2. Joh. vi.
 I which

- Near Beth- which he did on them that were disea- Anno
saida. fed. *^d And Jesus when he came out, ^{Ætat. 32.}
- Mar. vi. 34. saw much people, * and he received ^{Minift. 3.}
- Luke ix. 11. them * and was moved with compaffi- ^{Mat. xiv.}
- Mar. vi. 34. on towards them, becaufe they were as
sheep not having a shepherd: and he
- Luke ix. 11. began to teach them many things, * and
fpake unto them of the kingdom of
- Miracle. God, and healed them that had need
of healing.
- Joh. vi. 3. * And Jesus went up into a mountain,
4. and there he fat with his difciples, and
the paffover, a feaft of the *Jews*, was
- Mar. vi. 35. nigh. *^e And when the day was now far ^{Mat. xiv.}
- Luk. ix. 12. fpent, * then came the twelve and faid ^{15.}
- Mar. vi. 35. unto him, * *This is a defert place, and* ^{Luk. ix. 12.}
- Luk. ix. 12. *now the time is far paffed, *^f fend the* ^{Mat. xiv.}
- Mar. vi. 36. *multitude away, that they may go into* ^{15.}
- Mar. vi. 36. *the towns and country round about, and* ^{Mar. vi. 36.}
- Joh. vi. 5. * When Jesus then lift up *his* eyes
and faw a great company come unto
him, he faith unto Philip, *Whence fhall*
6. *we buy bread that thefe may eat?* (and
this he faid to prove him: for he him-
7. self knew what he would do) Philip
answered him, *Two hundred penny-worth*
of bread is not fufficient for them, that
every one of them may take a little.
- Mat. xiv. 16. *^g But Jesus faid unto them, *They* ^{Mar. vi.}
- Mar. vi. 37. *^h And they fay unto him, *fhall we go* ^{Luk. ix. 19.}
38. *and buy two hundred penny-worth of*
bread, and give them to eat? He faith unto
them, *How many loaves have ye?* go and
fee.

- Anno *see.* * One of his disciples, Andrew, Near Bethsai-
 Ætat. 32. Simon Peter's brother, faith unto him, ^{da.}
 Minist. 3. ^h There is a lad here, which hath five ^{8.} Joh. vi.
^h Mat. xiv. barley loaves, and two small fishes: but ^{9.}
 17. *what are they among so many?* * He said, 18. Mat. xiv.
 Mar. vi. 38. *bring them hither to me.*
 Luk. ix. 13. *ⁱ And he said to his disciples, *Make* 14. Luk. ix.
ⁱ Mat. xiv. *them sit down in a company by fifties*
 19. *upon the green grass.* * Now there 39. Mar. vi.
 Mar. vi. 39. *was much grass in the place, * and they* 10. Joh. vi.
 Joh. vi. 10. *did so, and made them all sit down, * and* 15. Luk. ix.
they sat down in ranks by hundreds and 40. Mar. vi.
 * Mat. xiv. *by fifties. * And when he had taken the* 41.
 19. *five loaves and the two fishes, he look-*
 Luk. ix. 16. *ed up to heaven, and blessed * them;* 16. Luk. ix.
 Joh. vi. 11. ** and when he had given thanks [he]* { 11. Joh. vi.
^h Mar. vi. 41. ** brake the loaves * [and] ¹ he distrib-* { 41. Mar. vi.
uted to his disciples, and the disciples 11. Joh. vi.
*to them that were set down, * and the* 41. Mar. vi.
two fishes divided he among them all
^m Mar. vi. ** as much as they would, * ^m and they* 11. Joh. vi.
 42. *did all eat, and were filled: * when* 20. Mar. xiv.
 Luk. ix. 17. *they were filled, he said unto his dis-* Miracle.
ciples, gather up the fragments that re- 12. Joh. vi.
main, that nothing be lost. Therefore 13.
^m Mat. xiv. *they ^m gathered them together, and fil-*
 20. *led twelve baskets with the fragments*
 Mar. vi. 43. *of the five barley loaves, which remain-*
 Luk. ix. 17. *ed over and above unto them that had*
^m Mar. vi. 44. *eaten, * and of the fishes. * ^o And they* { 43. Mar. vi.
 Luk. ix. 14. *that had eaten were about five thousand* { 21. Mar. xiv.
 Joh. vi. 10. *men, besides women and children.*
 * Then those men when they had seen 14. Joh. vi.
 the miracle that Jesus did, said, *This is*
of a truth that Prophet that should come into
 the world. ^p And straightway Jesus con- 22. Mat. xiv.
^p Mar. vi. 45, 46. *trained*

Near Beth- strained his disciples to get *into a ship*, Anno
 saida. and to go before him unto the other side, *Ætat.* 32.
 Mar. vi. 45. } * unto Bethsaida * while he sent the *Minist.* 3.
 Mat. xiv. 22. } 23. multitudes away. And when he had
 Joh. vi. 15. sent the multitudes away, [*He*] * per-
 ceived that they would come and take
 him by force, to make him a king, he
 departed again into a mountain himself
 Mat. xiv. 23. alone * to pray.

S E C T. LXVI.

Sea of Galilee. *Jesus walks upon the Sea, stils the
 Wind, and cures several sick.*

Joh. vi. 16. ^a **A**ND, when even was now come, ^a Mat. xiv.
 [*Jesus's*] disciples went down 23.
 17. unto the sea, and entred into a ship, and ^{Mar. vi. 47.}
 went over the sea towards Capernaum.
 Mar. vi. 47. * The ship was in the midt of the sea,
 Joh. vi. 17. and [*Jesus*] alone on the land, * and it
 Mar. vi. 48. was now dark, and Jesus was not come
 Mat. xiv. 24. to them, * and he saw them toiling
 in rowing: [*and*] the ship was now in
 the midt of the sea, tossed with waves,
 Joh. vi. 18. ^b for the wind was contrary: * and the ^b Mar. vi. 48.
 sea arose, by reason of a great wind that
 19. blew. So when they had rowed about
 five and twenty, or thirty furlongs
 Mat. xiv. 25. * ^c (a) in the fourth watch of the Night, ^c Mar. vi. 48.
 Miracle. Jesus went unto them walking on the
 48. } sea, * ^d and would have passed by them. ^d Mar. xiv.
 Mar. vi. 49. } 26.
 Joh. vi. 19.

(a) *Fourth watch of the night*, The last quarter of
 the night, commonly reckoned from cock-crowing
 to day-breaking.

But

mo But when they saw him walking upon Sea of Galilee.
 .cat. 32. the sea, they supposed it had been a
 .nist. 3. spirit, and cryed our (for they all saw 50. Mar. vi.
 .lar.vi.50. him, and were troubled.) * But straight- 27. Mat. xiv.
 .h. vi.20. way Jesus spake unto them, saying, *Be
 of good cheer, it is I, be not affraid.* And 28.
 Peter answered him, and said, *Lord, if
 it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the
 water;* and he said, come. And when 29.
 Peter was come down out of the ship,
 he walked on the water to go to Jesus.
 But when he saw the wind boistrous, 30.
 he was affraid: and beginning to sink,
 he cryed, saying, *Lord save me.* And 31.
 immediately Jesus stretched forth *his*
 hand, and caught him, and said unto
 him, *O thou of little faith, wherefore*
 Mar.vi.51. *didst thou doubt?* * and when they were 32.
 come into the ship, the wind ceased.
 * Then they willingly received him into 21. Joh. vi.
 the ship: and immediately the ship was
 at the Land whither they went. * And 51. Mar. vi.
 they were fore amazed in themselves
 beyond measure, and wondred. For 52.
 they considered not *the miracle* of the
 Loaves, for their heart was hardned.
 * Then they that were in the ship, came
 and worshipped him, saying, *Of a truth* 33. Mar. xiv.
thou art the son of God.
 Mat. xiv. * * And when they had passed over 53. Mar. vi.
 4- they came into the land of Gennezareth,
 and drew to the shore. And when Gennezareth.
 they were come out of the ship straight- 54.
 way they knew him. * And when
 the men of that place had knowledge
 of him, they sent out into all that coun-

Gennezareth. try round about, * and ran through that Anno
 Mar. vi. 55. whole region round about, and began ^{Ætat. 32.}
 to ^b carry about in beds those that were ^{Minist. 3.}
 56. sick, where they heard he was. And ^{Mat. xiv. 35.}
 whithersoever he entred into villages or
 cities, or country, they laid the sick in
 the streets, ⁱ and besought him that they ^{Mar. vi. 56.}
 might touch, if it were but the border
 of his garment: and as many as touched
 Miracle. 36. him, * * were made perfectly whole.
 Mat. xiv.

S E C T. LXVII.

*A Multitude follow Jesus from the
 other side of the Lake whom Jesus
 instructs. Some of his Disciples
 offended at his Discourses, leave
 him. Peter in the name of the
 twelve, assures him of their con-
 stancy, &c.*

Joh. vi. 22. **T**HE day following, when the peo-
 ple which stood on the other side
 of the sea, saw that there was none o-
 ther boat there, save that one wherein-
 to his disciples were entred, and that
 Jesus went not with his disciples into
 the boat, but that his disciples were
 23. gone away alone: (Howbeit there came
 other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto
 the place where they did eat bread, af-
 ter that the Lord had given thanks.)
 24. When the people therefore saw that Je-
 sus was not there, neither his disciples,
 they

anno they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum.
 Etat. 32. Capernaum seeking for Jesus. And 25. Joh. vi.
 linist. 3. when they had found him on the other
 side of the sea, they said to him, *Rabbi,*
when camest thou hither? Jesus answered 26.
 them and said; *Verily, verily, I say un-*
to you, ye seek me not because ye saw the
miracles, but because ye did eat of the
Loaves, and were filled. Labour not 27.
for the meat that perisheth, but for that
meat which endureth unto everlasting
life, which the son of man shall give un-
to you: for him hath God the Father
sealed.

Then said they unto him, *What shall* 28.
we do, that we might work the works
of God?

Jesus answered and said unto them, 29.
This is the work of God, that ye believe
on him whom he hath sent.

They said therefore unto him, *What* 30.
sign shewest thou then, that we may
see and believe thee? What dost thou
work? Our fathers did eat manna in 31.
the desert; as it is written, "He gave
" them bread from heaven to eat. [Psal.
lxxviii. 24.]

Then Jesus said unto them, " *Verily* 32.
 " *verily, I say unto you, Moses gave*
 " *you not that bread from heaven, but*
 " *my Father giveth you the true bread*
 " *from heaven. For the bread of God* 33.
 " *is he which cometh down from hea-*
 " *ven, and giveth life unto the world.*

Then said they unto him, *Lord ever-* 34.
more give us this bread.

- Capernaum. And Jesus said unto them, "I am the Anno
 Joh. vi. 35. "bread of life: he that cometh to me, Ætat. 32.
 "shall never hunger; and he that be- Minist. 3.
 36. "lieveth on me, shall never thirst. But
 37. "I said unto you, that ye also have
 "seen me, and believe not. All that
 "the Father giveth me, shall come to
 "me; and him that cometh to me, I
 38. "will in no wise cast out. For I came
 "down from heaven, not to do mine
 "own will, but the will of him that
 39. "sent me. And this is the Father's
 "will which hath sent me, that of all
 "which he hath given me, I should
 "lose nothing, but should raise it up
 40. "again at the last day. And this is the
 "will of him that sent me, that every
 "one which seeth the son, and believeth
 "on him, may have everlasting life: and
 "I will raise him up at the last day.
 41. The Jews then murmured at him, be-
 cause he said, I am the bread which
 came down from heaven. And they
 42. said, *Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph,*
whose father and mother we know? how
is it then that he saith, I came down
 43. *from heaven?* Jesus therefore answered
 44. and said unto them, "Murmur not a-
 "mong your selves. No man can
 "come to me, except the Father which
 "hath sent me, draw him: and I will
 45. "raise him up at the last day. It is
 "written in the prophets; [Isai. liv. 13.
 "Jer. xxxi. 34.] *And they shall be*
 "all taught of God. Every man there-
 fore that hath heard, and hath learn-
 "ed

no. " ed of the Father, cometh unto me. Capernaum.
at. 32. " Not that any man hath seen the Father, 46. Joh. vi.
list. 3. " save he which is of God; he hath
" seen the Father. Verily, verily I say 47.
" unto you, he that believeth on me
" hath everlasting life. I am that bread 48.
" of life. Your fathers did eat manna 49.
" in the wilderness and are dead. This 50.
" is the bread which cometh down from
" heaven, that a man may eat thereof
" and not die. I am the living bread 51.
" which came down from heaven;
" if any man eat of this bread, he shall
" live for ever: and the bread that I
" will give, is my flesh, which I will
" give for the life of the world.

The Jews therefore strove amongst 52.
themselves, saying, *How can this man
give us his flesh to eat?*

Then Jesus said unto them, " Verily 53.
" verily I say unto you, except ye eat
" the flesh of the son of man, and drink
" his blood, ye have no life in you.
" Whoso eateth my flesh and drinketh 54.
" my blood, hath eternal life, and I
" will raise him up at the last day. For 55.
" my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood
" is drink indeed. He that eateth my 56.
" flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwel-
" leth in me, and I in him. As the li- 57.
" ving Father hath sent me, and I live
" by the Father; so, he that eateth me,
" even he shall live by me. This is that 58.
" bread which came down from hea-
" ven; not as your fathers did eat man-
" na, and are dead: he that eateth
of

- Capernaum. " of this bread, shall live for ever. Anno
 vi. Joh. 59. These things said he in the synagoge Ætat. 3:
 60. as he taught in Capernaum. Many Ministr. :
- therefore of his disciples when they had heard this, said, *This is a hard saying,*
61. *who can bear it?* When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at
62. it, he said unto them, " Doth this offend you? *What* and if ye shall see the
- " son of man ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickneth,
63. " the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I spake unto you, *they* are spirit,
64. " and they are life. But there are some of you that believe not. For
- " Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and
- " who should betray him. And he said,
65. " Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come to me, except it were
- " given unto him of my Father.
66. From that *time* many of his disciples went back and walked no more with him.
67. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, *will*
68. *ye also go away?* Then Simon Peter answered him, *Lord, to whom shall we go?*
69. *Thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe and are sure that thou art Christ, the son of the living God.* Jesus
70. answered them, *Have not I chosen you*
71. *twelve, and one of you is a devil.* He spake of Judas Iscariot, *the son of Simon:* for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

3
L 32.
ft. 3.

Capernaum.

S E C T. LXVIII.

The third Passover after Christ's Baptism.

Jesus's Discourse concerning washing of hands, and the things by which Men are really defiled.

. xv. 1. **T**HEN came together unto [*Je-* 1. Mar. vii.
sus] the Pharisees, and certain
of the Scribes which came from Jeru-
salem, and when they saw some of his 2.
disciples eat bread with defiled (that is
to say with unwashen) hands, they
found fault. For the Pharisees and all 3.
the Jews, except they wash *their* hands
oft, eat not, holding the tradition of
the elders. And *when they come from* 4.
the market except they wash, they eat
not. And many other things there be,
which they have received to hold, *as*
the washing of cups and pots, brazen
. xv. vessels and of tables. * Then the Phari- 5.
sees and Scribes asked him, *Why walk*
not thy disciples according to the traditi-
on of the elders, but eat bread with un-
washen bands? He answered and said 6.
vii. 6. unto them, * Ye bypocrites, well did 7. Mat. xv.
Esaïas prophecy of you, saying, [xxix. 8.
13.] *This people draweth nigh unto me*
with their mouth, and honoureth me
with their lips: but their heart is far
xv. 7. *from me.* * *Howbeit, in vain do they* 7. Mar. xli.
worship

- Capernaum. *worship me, teaching for doctrines the* Anno
 Mar. vi. 8. *commandments of men.* "For laying *Ætat. 3*
 "afide the commandments of God, ye *Minist.*
 "hold the tradition of men, as the
 "washing of pots and cups : and many
 9. "other such like things ye do." And *Mat. x*
 he said unto them, "Full well ye re-
 "ject the commandment of God, that
 "ye may keep your own tradition.
 Mar. xv. 4. " *^f For God commanded [*by Moses*] *f* Mar. v
 "saying, Honour thy father and mother : *10.*
 "and, he that curseth father or mo-
 Mar. vii. 11. "ther, let him die the death. *^e But *Mat. xv*
 "ye say, if a man shall say to his fa-
 "ther or mother, *It is* (a) *Corban*,
 "that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever
 "thou mightest be profited by me,
 Mat. xv. 6. " *he shall be free* ; * and honour not his
 Mar. vii. 12. "father or mother, *he shall be free* ;
 " * and ye suffer him no more to do
 "ought for his father or mother :
 Mat. xv. 6. *^h Thus have ye made the command- *h* Mar. v
 "ment of God of none effect by your *13.*
 Mar. vii. 13. "tradition, * which ye have delivered,
 "and many such-like things do ye.
 14. " And when he had called all the peo- *Mat. x*
 ple unto him, he said unto them, *Hear-* *10, 11.*
ken unto me every one of you, and un-
 15. *derstand. There is nothing from with-*
out a man, that entring into him can de-

(a) *Corban*, *Corban* signifies a Gift ; and is used here for a man's Estate, devoted to God by his gift. By which they thought themselves excused from relieving their Parents if they had need, pretending their Estates were Gods, and they could not dispose of it to any one else.

file

o file him : but the things which come out Capernaum.
 L. 32. of him, those are they that defile the man.
 it. 3. If any man have ears to hear let him 16. Mar. vii.
 bear.

And when he was entred into the 17.
 house from the people, * then came 12. Mat. xv.
 his disciples and said unto him, Know-
 est thou that the Pharisees were offend-
 ed after they heard this saying ? But he 13.
 answered and said, Every plant which
 my heavenly Father hath not planted,
 shall be rooted up. Let them alone, they 14.
 be blind leaders of the blind ; and if the
 blind lead the blind, both shall fall into
 the ditch. * Then answered Peter, and 15.
 said unto him, Declare unto us this pa-
 rable. And Jesus said, " are ye also yet 16.
 it. xv. " without understanding ? ' Do ye not 18. Mar. vii.
 " perceive that whatsoever thing from
 " without entreth into the man, it can-
 " not defile him ; because it entreth 19.
 " not into his heart, but into the belly,
 " and goeth out into the draught, pur-
 ar. vii. ging all meats ? * ^m But those things 18. Mat. xv.
 " which proceed out of the mouth,
 " come forth from the heart, and they
 it. xv. " defile the man. * ⁿ For from within, 21. Mar. vii.
 " out of the heart of men, proceed evil
 " thoughts, adulteries, fornications,
 " murders, thefts, * false witness, { 19. Mat. xv.
 " * covetousness, wickedness, deceit, { 22. Mar. vii.
 " lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy,
 t. xv. " pride, foolishness : ° All these evil 23.
 " things come from within and defile
 " the man, * but to eat with unwashen 20. Mat. xv.
 " hands, defileth not a man.

Coast of Tyre
and Sidon.

S E C T. LXIX.

Anno
Ærat. 3
Miniſt.

*Jesus cureth the Daughter of a Cana-
nitish Woman, possessed by an evil
Spirit.*

- Mat. xv. 21. **T**HEN Jesus went thence, and ^a Mar. v
Mar. vii. 24. departed into the coasts of Tyre
and Sidon, * and entred into an house,
and would have no man know it, but he
25. could not be hid. ^b For a certain wo- ^b Mat. x
Mat. xv. 22. man * of Canaan came out of the same 22.
Mar. vii. 25. coasts * whose young daughter had an
unclean spirit, heard of him and came and
Mat. xv. 22. fell at his feet: *and cryed unto him, say-
ing, *Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son
of David; my daughter is grievously vexed*
Mar. vii. 26. *with a devil.* * (The woman was a greek, a
syrophenician by nation) and she be-
fought him that he would cast forth the
Mat. xv. 23. devil out of her daughter. * But he an-
swered her not a word. And his disci-
ples came and befought him, saying,
Send her away, for she crieth after us.
Mar. vii. 27. * But Jesus said unto her, *let the chil-
dren first be filled, for it is not meet to take
the childrens bread, and to cast it unto*
Mat. xv. 24. *dogs.* * *I am not sent but unto the lost*
25. *sheep of the house of Israel.* Then came
she and worshipped him saying, *Lord,*
26. *help me.* But he answered and said, *It*
is not meet to take the childrens bread,
27. *and cast it to dogs.* ^c And she said, *Truth* ^c Mar. v
Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs, 28.
which

no *which fall from their masters table.* Coast of Tyre
 32. Then Jesus answered and said unto her, and Sidon.
 iust. 3. O woman, great is thy faith, be it unto thee even as thou wilt. * For this saying 28. Mar. xv.
 go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter. And when she was come to 29. Mar. vii.
 her house, she found the devil gone out, Miracle.
 and her daughter laid upon the bed. 30.
 * And her daughter was made whole 28. Mat. xv.
 from that very hour.

S E C T. LXX.

Jesus cureth a dumb Man and several others.

Mat. xv. * **A**ND again [*Jesus*] departing 31. Mar. vii.
 from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis, *and went up into a mountain 29. Mar. xv.
 and sat down there. * And they bring 32. Mar. vii.
 unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. 33.
 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue. 34.
 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said unto him, *Ephphatha*, that is, *be opened*. And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his 35.
 tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. 36.
 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they

Capernaum. they published it, and were beyond mea- Anno
 Mar. vii. 37. sure astonished, saying, *He hath done* *Ætat. 3*
all things well: he maketh both the deaf *Minist.*
to hear, and the dumb to speak.

Mat. xv. 30. * And great multitudes came unto
 him, having with them those that were
 lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many
 others; and cast them down at Jesus's
 feet, and he healed them. Infomuch

Miracle. 31. that the multitude wondred when they
 saw the dumb to speak, and the maim-
 ed to be whole, and the lame to walk,
 and the blind to see; and they glorifi-
 ed the God of Israel.

S E C T. LXXI.

*Jesus feeds four thousand Men with
 seven Loaves and a few Fishes.*

- Mar. viii 1. **I**N those days the multitude being ve-
 ry great, and having nothing to eat,
 * Jesus called his disciples unto him, * Mat. xv.
 2. and saith unto them, " I have compas- 32.
 " sion on the multitude, because they
 " have now been with me three days,
 3. " and have nothing to eat: and if I
 " send them away fasting to their own
 " houses they will faint by the way:
 " for divers of them came from far.
 Mat. xv. 33. *^b And his disciples say unto him, ^b Mar. vii
Whence should we have so much bread in, 4, 5.
the wilderness as to fill so great a mul-
 34. *titude?* and Jesus saith unto them, *How*
many loaves have ye? and they said, se- ^c Mar. viii.
 35. *ven, and a few little fishes.* * And he
 commanded

Anno commanded the multitude to sit down Galilee.
 Ærat. 32. on the ground, *^d and he took the se- 6. Mar. viii.
 Ministr. 3. ven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake,
 4 Mat. xv. and gave to his disciples to set before
 36. them: and they did set them before
 the people. And they had a few small 7.
 fishes, and he blessed, and commanded
 to set them also before them. *^e And 37. Mat. xv.
 8, 9. they did all eat, and were filled: and Miracle.
 they took up of the broken meat that
 was left, seven baskets full. And they 38.
 that did eat, were four thousand men
 beside women and children. And he 39.
 10. Mar. viii.
 39. sent away the multitude *^f and straight-
 way he entred into a ship with his dis-
 ciples, and came into the parts of Dal-
 manutha [on] the coasts of Magdala. 39. Mat. xv.

S E C T. LXXII.

*The Pharisees and Sadducees tempt Je-
 sus by asking him a sign.*

* Mar. viii. 11. **T**HE Pharisees also with the Saddu- 1. Mat. xvi.
 cees came, and tempting desired
 [Jesus] that he would shew them a
 sign from heaven. He answered and
 said unto them, "when it is evening, 2.
 "ye say, *It will be* fair weather, for the
 "sky is red. And in the morning, *It* 3.
 "*will be* foul weather to day, for the
 "sky is red and lowring. O ye hypo-
 "crites, ye can discern the face of the
 "sky, but can ye not discern the signs
 "of the times? * And he sighed deeply 12. Mar. viii.
 12. Mat. xvi.
 12. in his spirit, and saith, *^b "a wicked
 K "and

Dalmanutha. " and adulterous generation seeketh Anno
 Mar. viii. 12. " after a sign. * " Verily I say unto you, ^{Act. 32.}
 " There shall no sign be given to this ^{Minist. 3.}
 " generation * but the sign of the pro- ^{Mat. xvi. 4.}
 " phet Jonas.

S E C T. LXXIII.

Galilee.

*Jesus bids his Disciples beware of the
 leaven of the Pharisees, and of the
 Sadducees.*

Mar. viii. 13. * **A**ND he left them, and entring in- ^{Mat. xvi. 4.}
 to the ship again, departed to
 Mat. xvi. 5. the other side. * And when his disci-
 ples were come to the other side, ^b they ^b Mar. viii.
 Mar. viii. 14. had forgotten to take bread, * neither ^{14.}
 had they in the ship with them more
 Mat. xvi. 6. than one loaf. * " Then Jesus said un-
 to them, *Take heed and beware of the*
leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Saddu-
 Mar. viii. 15. *cees, * and of the leaven of Herod. * " And* ^d Mar. viii.
 Mat. xvi. 7. *they reasoned among themselves, saying,* ^{16, 17.}
 8. *it is because we have no bread: which*
 when Jesus perceived, he said unto them,
Why reason ye among your selves, O ye
of little faith, because ye have no bread?
 Mar. viii. 17. * *perceive ye not yet, * neither under-* ^e Mat. xvi.
 stand? *have ye your hearts yet har-* ^{9, 10.}
 18. *dened? having eyes, see ye not? having*
ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remem-
 19. *ber? When I brake the five loaves among*
five thousand, how many baskets full of
fragments took ye up? They say unto
 20. *him, twelve. And when the seven a-*
mong

Anno *mong four thousand, how many baskets* Galilee.
 Ætat. 32. *full of fragments took ye up? And they*
 Minist. 3. *said seven. And he said unto them,*
 † Mar. viii. * *How is it that ye do not understand,* { 21. Mar. viii.
 21. *that I spake it not to you concerning* { 11. Mat. xvi.
bread, that ye should beware of the le-
ven of the Pharisees, and of the Saddu-
cees? Then understood they how that
he had them not beware of the leaven of
bread, but of the doctrine of the Pha-
risees and of the Sadducees.

S E C T. LXXIV.

Jesus cures a blind Man at Bethsaida. Bethsaida.

AND [*Jesus*] cometh to Bethsaida, 22. Mar. viii.
 and they bring a blind man unto
 him, and besought him to touch him.
 And he took the blind man by the hand, 23.
 and led him out of the Town; and
 when he had spit on his eyes, and put
 his hands upon him, he asked him if he
 saw ought. And he looked up, and said, 24.
I see men as trees, walking. After that 25.
 he put his hands again upon his eyes,
 and made him look up: and he was re-Miracle.
 stored, and saw every man clearly.
 And he sent him away to his house, 26.
 saying, *Neither go into the town, nor*
tell it to any in the town.

Territory of
Cæsarea Philippi.

S E C T. LXXV.

Anno
Ætat. 32.
Minist. 3.

Jesus goes to the Territory of Cæsarea Philippi, by the way asks his Disciples what People thought of him; tells them he must die, and they suffer many things for his sake.

- Mar. viii. 27. * **A**ND Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cæsarea • Mat. xv 13.
- Luk. ix. 18. Philippi: and by the way * it came to pass as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: ^b and he asked b Mat. xv 13, 14.
- Mat. xvi. 13. them saying, *Whom do men say, that I, ^c the son of man, am?* and they said, *some say that thou art John the Baptist, some* Mar. viii. 27, 28, 2 Luk. ix. 1
- Luk. ix. 19. *Elias, and others Jeremias, * and others say that one of the old prophets is risen* 19, 20.
- Mat. xvi. 15. again. * He saith unto them, *But whom*
16. *say ye that I am?* And Simon Peter answered and said, *Thou art the Christ,*
17. *the son of the living God.* And Jesus answered and said to him, *Blessed art thou Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my*
18. *Father which is in heaven.* And I say also unto thee, *that thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against*
19. *it.* And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

- Anno^o ven. Then charged he his disciples that Territory o.^o
 Mat. 32. they should tell no man that he was Cæſarea Philⁱ
 Miſt. 3. Jesus the Christ. lippi.
 Mar. viii. From that time forth, began Jesus 20. Mat. xvi.
 30. 21.
 Luk. ix. 21. to shew unto his disciples, how that
 Mar. viii. he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer
 31. many things of the elders, and chief
 Luk. ix. 22. priests, and scribes, and he killed, and
 Mar. xvi. be raised again the third day. * And 32. Mar. viii.
 22. he spake that saying openly. And Pe-
 ter took him, and began to rebuke him
 * saying, *Be it far from thee, Lord, this* 22. Mat. xvi.
 Mar. xvi. *shall not be done unto thee.* * But when 33. Mar. viii.
 23, 24. he had turned about, and looked on his
 disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, *Get*
*thee behind me, Satan, * thou art an of-* 23. Mat xvi.
*fence to me: * for thou savourest not the* 33. Mar. viii.
things that be of God, but the things that
be of men.
 Luk. ix. 23. * And when he had called the people 34.
 unto him with his disciples also, he said
 unto them, "whoſoever will come af-
 ter me, let him deny himself and take
 Mar. xvi. up his cross daily and follow me. * For 23. Luk. ix.
 25, 26. "whoſoever will save his life, shall lose 33. Mar. viii.
 Luk. ix. 24, "it, but whoſoever shall lose his life for
 25. "my ſake and the Gospels, the ſame
 "shall ſave it. For what ſhall it pro- 35.
 "fit a man, if he ſhall gain the whole
 "world, and loſe his own ſoul? or 37.
 "what ſhall a man give in exchange
 Luk. ix. 26. "for his ſoul? * Whoſoever therefore 38.
 "shall be aſhamed of me, and of my
 "words, in this adulterous and ſinful
 "generation, of him alſo ſhall the ſon
 "of man be aſhamed, when he cometh
 K 3 "in

- Territory of " in * his own glory [*and*] in the * glo- Anno
 Cæsarea Phi- " ry of his Father, with the holy angels. *Ætat. 32.*
 lippi. " * For the son of man shall come in *Minist. 3.*
 Luk. ix. 26. } " the glory of his Father, with his an-
 Mar. viii. 37. } gels; and then he shall reward every
 Mar. xvi. 27. " man according to his works. * * And *Mat. xvi.*
 Mar. ix. 1. " he said unto them, verily I say unto *28.*
 " you, that there be some of them that *Luk. ix. 27.*
 " stand here, which shall not taste of
 " death, till they have seen the king-
 " dom of God come with power [*or*]
 Mat. xvi. 28. " * till they see the son of man come
 " in his kingdom.

S E C T. LXXVI.

*The Transfiguration of Christ, his Dis-
course concerning Elias.*

- Luk. ix. 28. * A N D it came to pass about eight * Mat. xvii.
 Mat. xvii. 1. days after these sayings, *^b Jesus *1.*
 taketh Peter, James, and John his bro- *Mar. ix. 2.*
 ther, and bringeth them up into an high *Luk. ix. 28.*
 Luk. ix. 28. mountain apart * to pray. And as he
 29. prayed, the fashion of his countenance
 Mar. ix. 2. was altered, * and he was transfigured
 Miracle. before them, * and his face did shine as
 Mat. xvii. 2. the sun, * and his rayment was white as *Luk. ix.*
 Mar. ix. 3. light, * shining exceeding white as snow; *29. 30.*
 so as no fuller on earth can white them.
 Mat. xvii. 3. * And behold there appeared unto them,
 Mar. ix. 4. Moses and Elias. *^d And they were talk- *d Mat. xvii.*
 Luk. ix. 31. ing with Jesus, * who appeared in glo- *3.*
 32. ry, and spake of his decease, which he
 should accomplish at Jerusalem. But
 Peter and they that were with him,
 were

- Anno were heavy with sleep: and when they Territory of
 Ætat. 32. were awake, they saw his glory, and the Cæsarea Phi-
 Minist. 3. two men that stood with him. And it lippi.
 3. came to pass as they departed from him, 33. Luk. ix.
 * Mat. xvii. * Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is
 4- good for us to be here; and let us make
 Mar. ix. 5, 6. three tabernacles, one for thee, and one
 for Moses, and one for Elias: not know-
 ing what he said, * for they were sore 6. Mar. ix.
 † Luk. ix. affraid. * † While he yet spake behold 5. Mat. xvii.
 34- a bright cloud overshadowed them: * and 34. Luk. ix.
 * Mar. ix. 7. they feared as they entred into the
 cloud, * and behold a voice out of the 5. Mat. xvii.
 † Luk. ix. 35. cloud, which said, *This is my beloved
 son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye
 him.* And when the disciples heard it, 6.
 they fell on their face, and were sore
 affraid. And Jesus came and touched 7.
 them, and said, *Arise, and be not affraid.* 8. Mar. ix.
 * Mat. xvii. * † And suddenly when they had looked
 8. round about, they saw no man any more
 Luk. ix. 36. save Jesus only with themselves. * And 9.
 * Mat. xvii. as they came down from the mountain,
 9. he charged them that they should tell
 no man what things they had seen, till
 the son of man were risen from the dead.
 And they kept that saying within them- 10.
 selves, * and they kept it close, and 36. Luk. ix.
 told no man in those days any of those
 things which they had seen, * question- 10. Mar. ix.
 ing one with another what the rising
 from the dead should mean.
 † Mat. ix. 11. * † And his disciples asked him, say- 10. Mat. xvii.
 ing, *Why then say the Scribes, that Elias
 must first come?* * † And he answered 12. Mar. ix.
 * Mar. xvii. and told them, *Elias verily cometh first,*
 11, 12.

Territory of *and restoreth all things: and how it is* Anno
 Cæsarea Phi- *written of the son of man, that he must* Arar. 32.
 lippi. *suffer many things, and be set at nought.* Minist. 3.
 Mar. ix. 13. *But I say unto you that Elias is indeed*
 Mat. xvii. 12. *come * already, and they knew him not,*
 Mar. ix. 13. * *And they have done unto him whatso-* Mat. xvii
ever they listed, as it is written of him. 12.
 Mat. xvii. 12. * *Likewise shall also the son of man suf-*
 13. *fer of them. Then the disciples under-*
stood that he spake unto them of John
the Baptist.

S E C T. LXXVII.

*Jesus cureth a Boy possessed with a
 dumb Dæmon, which his Apostles
 could not cast out.*

Luk. ix. 37. **A**ND it came to pass, that on the
 next day, when they were come
 down from the hill, much people met
 Mar. ix. 14. him. * And when he came to his dis-
 ciples, he saw a great multitude about
 them, and the Scribes questioning with
 15. them. And straightway all the people
 when they beheld him, were greatly
 amazed, and running to him, saluted
 16. him. And he asked the Scribes, *What*
 Mat. xvii. 14. *question ye with them?* And when they
 Luk. ix. 38. were come to the multitude, * behold
 Mar. ix. 17. a man of the company * one of the mul-
 Mar. xvii. 14. } titude * kneeling down to him * cried
 Luk. ix. 38. } out, saying, *Master [or] Lord * I have*
 Mat. xvii. 15 } *brought unto thee my son, which hath a*
 Mat. ix. 17. } *dumb spirit: I beseech thee look upon*
 Luk. ix. 38. *my*

Anno. my son, * have mercy on my son, * for Territory of
 Stat. 32. he is my only child. * For he is lunatick Casarea Phi-
 Minist. 3. and sore vexed: for oft times he fal- lippi.
 * Mar. ix. 18. * And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he 15. Mat. xvii.
 suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him 38. Luk. ix.
 and he foameth again; * and gnasheth 15. Mat. xvii.
 with his teeth and pineth away: * and 39. Luk. ix.
 bruising him hardly departeth from him. 18. Mar. ix.
 * Mar. ix. 18. * And I brought him * to thy disciples and 39. Luk. ix.
 18, 19. besought [them] * that they should cast { 16. Mat. xvii
 Luk. ix. him out, * and they could not cure him. { 40. Luk. ix.
 40, 41. Then Jesus answered and said, O faith- { 18. Mar. ix.
 less and perverse generation, how long { 16. Mat. xvii
 shall I be with you? how long shall I suf- 17.
 fer you? bring * thy son * hither to me. { 41. Luk. ix.
 * And they brought him unto him: 20. Mar. ix.
 * and as he was yet a coming, * and { 42. Luk. ix.
 he saw him, straightway * the devil { 22. Mar. ix.
 threw him down and tare him, * and 42. Luk. ix.
 he fell on the ground and wallowed 20. Mar. ix.
 foaming. And he asked his father, How 21.
 long it is ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child. And oftimes 22.
 it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou 23.
 canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us. Jesus said unto him, 23.
 If thou canst believe, all things are pos- 24.
 sible to him that believeth. And straight- 24.
 way the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; 25.
 help thou mine unbelief. When Jesus 25.
 saw that the people came running to- gether, * he rebuked the foul spirit,
 saying unto him, Thou dumb, and deaf spirit, 1
 * Mat. xvii. 18. Luk. ix. 42. Miracle.

Territory of *Spirit, I charge thee come out of him,* Anno
Caesarea Phi- and enter no more into him. And the *Ætat. 32.*
Eppl. Spirit cried, and rent him fore, *^d and ^dMar. ix. 26.
 Mar. ix. 26. *he departed out of him; * and he was as*
 Mar. xvii. 18. *one dead, insomuch that many said, He*
 Mar. ix. 26. *27. is dead. But Jesus took him by the hand,*
 Mar. xvii. 18. *and lifted him up, and he arose. * And*
 Luk. ix. 42. *the child was cured from that very*
*hour * and he delivered him again to,*
his father.

S E C T. LXXVIII.

*The Disciples question Jesus why they
 could not cast out the dumb Spirit.*

Mar. ix. 28. **A**ND when he was come into the ^dMar. ix. 28.
 Mar. xvii. 19. *house, * Then came the disciples*
to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not
we cast him out? And Jesus said unto
 20. *them, " Because of your unbelief: for*
 " *verily I say unto you, If ye have*
 " *faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye*
 " *shall say unto this mountain, remove*
 " *hence to yonder place, and nothing*
 21. *shall be impossible to you. ^bHowbeit ^bMar. ix. 26*
 " *this kind goeth not out, but by*
 Luk. ix. 43. *prayer and fasting. * And they were*
 " *all amazed at the mighty power of*
 " *God.*

Anno
Ætat. 32.
Minist. 3.

S E C T. LXXIX.

*Jesus goeth into Galilee, foretells his
Death and Resurrection, which
his Disciples comprehend not.*

BUT while they wondred every one ^{43. Luk. ix.}
at all things which Jesus did * they ^{30. Mar. ix.}
departed thence and passed through Ga- ^{22. Mat. xvii.}
lilee; and while they abode in Galilee, ^{30. Mar. ix.}
he would not that any man should know
* Mat. xvii. *it* : for he taught his disciples: * ^{31.}
^{22.} said unto his disciples, *Let these sayings* ^{43. Luk. ix.}
^{Mar. ix. 31.} sink down into your ears: ^b *for the son* ^{44.}
^{b Mat. xvii.} of man shall * be betrayed into the hands ^{22. Mat. xvii.}
^{22.} of men: * ^c and they shall kill him, and ^{31. Mar. ix.}
^{Mar. ix. 31.} after that he is killed, he shall rise the ^{45. Luk. ix.}
^{Luk. ix. 44.} third day. * ^d But they understood not
^{c Mat. xvii.} that saying, and it was hid from them,
^{23.} that they perceived it not. * And ^{{ 23. Mat. xvii}
^{d Mar. ix. 31.} they were exceeding sorry, * ^{and they} ^{{ 45. Luk. ix.}
^{Mar. ix. 32.} feared to ask him of that saying.

S E C T. LXXX.

Jesus pays the Tribute Money. Capernaum.

AND when they were come to Ca- ^{24. Mat. xvii.}
pernaum, they that received tribute
money, came to Peter, and said, *Doth
not your Master pay tribute?* He saith,
yes. And when he was come into the ^{25.}
house, Jesus prevented him, saying,
*What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom do
the*

- Capernaum. *the kings of the earth take custom or tribute ? of their own children , or of* Anno
 Mat. xvii. 26. *strangers ?* Peter saith unto him, *Of* Eccl. 32.
strangers. Jesus saith unto him, *Then* Minist. 3.
 27. *are the children free. Notwithstanding,*
lest we should offend them , go thou to
the sea , and cast an hook , and take up
the fish that first cometh up : and when
thou hast opened his mouth , thou shalt
find a piece of money : that take , and
give unto them for me and thee.

S E C T. LXXXI.

Jesus rebukes his Disciples for their ambition , who contended for priority in the Kingdom of Heaven. Instructs them concerning giving Offence to none , and forgiving Injuries. He forbids the molesting of one that cast out devils in his name.

- Mar. ix. 33. **A**ND being in the house , he asked
 them, *What was it that ye disputed among your selves by the way ?* But
 34. *they held their peace : * for by the way* Luk. ix. 46.
 they had disputed among themselves
 Luk. ix. 47. *who should be the greatest. * And Je-*
 sus perceiving the thought of their
 Mar. ix. 35. *heart , * he sat down and called the*
twelve , and saith unto them , If any
man desire to be first , the same shall be
last of all , and servant of all.

* At

Anno * At the same time came the disciples ^{Capernaum.}
 Ætat. 32. unto Jesus, saying, *Who is the greatest* ^{1. Mat. xviii.}
 Minist. 3. *in the kingdom of heaven?* * and Jesus 2.
 6 Mar. ix. called a little child unto him, and set
 36. him in the midst of them, * and when ^{36. Mar. ix.}
 Luk. ix. 47. he had taken him in his arms, he said
 unto them, " Verily I say unto you, ^{3. Mat. xviii.}
 " except ye be converted, and become
 " as little children, ye shall not enter
 " into the kingdom of heaven. Who- 4.
 " soever therefore shall humble himself
 " as this little child, the same is greatest
 " in the kingdom of heaven. * And 5.
 9 Mar. ix. 37. " who so shall receive one such little
 Luk. ix. 48. " child in my name receiveth me, * and ^{37. Mar. ix.}
 " whosoever shall receive me, receiveth
 " not me, but him that sent me; * for ^{48. Luk. ix.}
 " he that is least among you all, the
 4 Mar. ix. " same shall be great. 4 * But who so ^{6. Mat. xviii.}
 42. " shall offend one of these little ones
 " which believe in me, it were better
 " for him that a millstone were hanged
 " about his neck, and ~~that~~ he were
 " drowned in the depth of the sea.
 " Wo unto the world because of offen- 7.
 " ces: for it must needs be that offen-
 " ces come: but wo to that man by
 9 Mar. ix. 43. " whom the offence cometh. * Where- 8.
 " fore if thy hand or thy foot offend
 " thee, cut them off, and cast them
 " from thee: it is better for thee to en-
 " ter into life halt or maimed, rather
 " than having two hands or two feet,
 9 Mar. xviii. " * to go into hell, into the fire that ^{43. Mar. ix.}
 8. " never shall be quenched: where their ^{44.}
 " worm dieth not, and the fire is not
 quenched.

- Capernaum. " quenched. *And if thy foot offend Anno
 Mar. ix. 45. " thee, cut it off: it is better for thee *Ætar.* 32
 " to enter halt into life, than having *Minist.* 3
 " two feet, to be cast into hell, into
 " the fire that never shall be quenched
 46. " where their worm dieth not, and the
 Mat. xviii. 9. " fire is not quenched. * * And if thine *Mar. ix. 4;*
 " eye offend thee, pluck it out and cast
 Mar. ix. 47. " it from thee: * ¹ it is better for thee ² *Mat. xvii*
 " to enter into the kingdom of God 9.
 " with one eye, than having two eyes,
 48. " to be cast into hell fire: where their
 " worm dieth not, and their fire is not
 " quenched.
 49. " For every one shall be salted with
 " fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted
 50. " with salt. Salt is good: but if the
 " salt have lost his saltness, wherewith
 " will you season it? Have salt in your
 " selves, and have peace one with a-
 " nother.
 Mat. xviii. 10. " * Take heed that ye despise not
 " one of these little ones; for I say un-
 " to you, that in heaven their angels
 " do always behold the face of my Fa-
 11. " ther which is in heaven. For the son
 " of man is come to save that which
 12. " was lost. How think ye? if a man
 " have an hundred sheep, and one of
 " them be gone astray, doth he not
 " leave the ninety and nine, and goeth
 " into the mountains, and seeketh that
 13. " which is gone astray? And if so be
 " that he find it, verily I say unto you,
 " he rejoiceth more at that *sheep*, than
 " of the ninety and nine which went
 " not

Anno . . . " not alſtray. Even ſo it is not the Capernaum.
 Eccl. 32. " will of your Father which is in hea- 14. Mar. xviii.
 Miniſt. 3. " ven, that one of theſe little ones
 " ſhould periſh.
 " Moreover if thy Brother ſhall tref- 15.
 " paſſ againſt thee, go and tell him his
 " fault between thee and him alone.
 " If he ſhall hear thee, thou haſt gain-
 " ed thy brother. But if he will not 16.
 " hear thee, then take with thee one or
 " two more, that in the mouth of two
 " or three witneſſes every word may be
 " eſtabliſhed. And if he ſhall neglect 17.
 " to hear them, tell it unto the church:
 " but if he neglect to hear the church,
 " let him be unto thee as an heathen
 " man and a publican. Verily I ſay un- 18.
 " to you, whatſoever ye ſhall bind on
 " earth, ſhall be bound in heaven: and
 " whatſoever ye ſhall looſe on earth,
 " ſhall be looſed in heaven.
 " Again I ſay unto you, that if two 19.
 " of you ſhall agree on earth as touch-
 " ing any thing that they ſhall ask, it
 " ſhall be done for them of my Father
 " which is in heaven. For where two 20.
 " or three are gathered together in my
 " name, there am I in the miſt of
 " them.
 " Then came Peter to him, and ſaid, 21.
 " Lord, how oft ſhall my brother ſin
 " againſt me, and I forgive him? till
 " ſeven times? Jeſus ſaith unto him, I 22.
 " ſay not to thee, until ſeven times;
 " but, until ſeventy times ſeven.

" There-

Capernaum.

Mat. xviii. 23.

“ Therefore is the kingdom of hea- Anno

“ ven likened to a certain king which *Ærat. 31*“ would take account of his servants. *Minist. 9*

24. “ And when he had begun to reckon,

“ one was brought to him which ought

25. “ him ten thousand talents. But for-

“ as much as he had not to pay, his

“ Lord commanded him to be sold,

“ and his wife and children and all that

“ he had, and payment to be made.

26. “ The servant therefore fell down and

“ worshipped him, saying, Lord have

“ patience with me, and I will pay

27. “ thee all. Then the Lord of that ser-

“ vant was moved with compassion, and

“ loosed him and forgave him the debt.

28. “ But the same servant went out, and

“ found one of his fellow servants,

“ which ought him an hundred pence:

“ and he laid hands on him, and took

“ him by the throat, saying, pay me

29. “ that thou owest. And his fellow ser-

“ vant fell down at his feet, and be-

“ sought him, saying, Have patience

“ with me, and I will pay thee all.

30. “ And he would not, but went and

“ cast him into prison, till he should

“ pay the debt.

31. “ So when his fellow servants saw

“ what was done, they were very sorry,

“ and came and told their Lord all that

32. “ was done. Then his Lord, after

“ that he had called him, said unto

“ him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave

“ thee all that debt because thou defi-

33. “ redst me. Shouldest thou not also have

“ had

Anno
Erat. 32.
Christ. 3.
" had compassion on thy fellow servant, Capernaum:
" even as I had pity on thee? And his 34. Mat. xviii.
" Lord was wrath, and deliver'd him
" to the tormentors till he should pay
" all that was due to him.
" So likewise shall my heavenly fa- 35.
" ther do also unto you, if ye from
" your hearts forgive not every one his
" brother their trespasses.
Luke ix.
19, 50. * " And John answered him saying, 38. Mar. ix.
" Master, we saw one casting out devils
" in thy name, and he followeth not us;
" and we forbid him, because he followeth
" not us. But Jesus said, " forbid him 39.
" not: for there is no man which shall
" do a miracle in my name, that can
" lightly speak evil of me: For he 40.
" that is not against us, is on our part.
" For whosoever shall give you a cup 41.
" of water to drink in my name, be-
" cause ye belong to Christ, verily I
" say unto you, he shall not lose his
" reward.

S E C T. LXXXII.

*Christ going to Jerusalem. The Sa- Galilee.
maritans by the way refuse to enter-
tain him, &c.*

AFTER these things, Jesus walked in r. John vii.
Galilee: for he would not walk
in Jewry, because the Jews sought to
kill him.

L Now

Galilee.
John vii.

Now the Jews feast of tabernacles Anno
2. was at hand. His brethren therefore *Exat. 32.*
3. said unto him, *Depart hence, and go in- Minist. 3.*
to Judea, that thy disciples also may see
the works that thou doest. For there is
4. no man that doeth any thing in secret,
and he himself seeketh to be known open-
ly. If thou do these things, shew thy
self to the world.

5. For neither did his brethren believe
6. in him. Then Jesus said unto them,

“ My time is not yet come : but your

7. “ time is alway ready. The world

“ cannot hate you ; but me it hateth,

“ because I testifie of it, that the works

8. “ thereof are evil. Go ye up unto this

“ feast : I go not up yet unto this feast,

“ for my time is not yet full come.

9. When he had said these words to them,

10. he abode still in Galilee. But when

his brethren were gone up, then went

he also up unto the feast ; not openly,

Luke ix. 51. but as it were in secret. * And it came

to pass, when the time was come that

he should be received up, he stedfastly

52. set his face to go to Jerusalem, and sent

messengers before his face : and they

Village of the went and entred into a Village of the

Samaritans. Samaritans to make ready for him. And

53. they did not receive him, because his

face was as tho' he would go to Jeru-

54. salem. And when his disciples James

and John saw this, they said, *Lord,*

wilt thou that we command fire to come

down from heaven, and consume them,

55. *even as Elias did?* But he turned and

rebuked

10 rebuked them, and said, *Ye know not* Village of the
 11. 32. *what manner of spirit ye are of.* For the Samaritans.
 11ft. 3. *the son of man is not come to destroy mens* 56. Luke ix:
lives; but to save them. And they went
 to another village.

And it came to pass, that as they 57:
 went in the way, a certain man said
 unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whi- 58:
 thersoever thou goest. And Jesus said
 unto him, *Foxes have holes, and birds*
of the air have nests, but the son of man
hath not where to lay his head.

And he said to another, *follow me :* 59:
 But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go
 and bury my father. Jesus said unto 60:
 him, *Let the dead bury their dead ; but*
go thou and preach the kingdom of
God.

And another also said, Lord, I will 61:
 follow thee ; but let me first go bid
 them farewell which are at home at my
 house. And Jesus said unto him, No 62:
 man having put his hand to the plough,
 and looking back, is fit for the kingdom
 of God.

S E C T. LXXXIII.

Jesus sendeth seventy Disciples by
two and two into these places thro
which he design'd to pass.

AFTER these things, the Lord appoin- 1. Luke x.
 ted other seventy also, and sent
 them two and two before his face into
 every city and place whither he himself

- Village of the Samaritans. Luke x. would come. Therefore said he unto them, "The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways: Behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes; and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, peace be to this house. And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it; if not it shall turn to you again. And in the same house refrain eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you. And heal the sick that are therein, and say to them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, Even the very dust of the city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you; notwithstanding be sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida; for if the mighty works
- Anno Ærat. 32. Minist. 3.

Anno " works had been done in Tyre and A Village of
 Eccl. 32. " Sidon, which have been done in you, the Samaritans
 Minist. 3. " they had a great while ago repented, Luke x.
 " fitting in sackcloth and ashes. But 14.
 " it shall be more tolerable for Tyre
 " and Sidon at the judgment, than
 " for you. And thou Capernaum, 15.
 " which art exalted to heaven, shall
 " be thrust down to hell. He that 16.
 " heareth you, heareth me ; and he
 " that despiseth you, despiseth me ;
 " and he that despiseth me, despiseth
 " him that sent me.

S E C T. LXXXIV.

*The Jews seek for Jesus at Jerusalem. Temple.
 About the middle of the Feast he
 teaches in the Temple. The Jews
 endeavour to lay Hands on him.*

THen the Jews sought [Jesus] at 11. John vii.
 the feast, and said, *where is he ?*
 And there was much murmuring among 12.
 the People concerning him ; for some
 said, *He is a good man ;* others said,
nay, but he deceiveth the people. How- 13.
 beit no man spake openly of him, for
 fear of the Jews.

Now about the midst of the feast, 14.
 Jesus went up into the temple, and
 taught. And the Jews marvelled, say- 15.
 ing, *How knoweth this man letters, ha-*
ving never learned ? Jesus answered 16.
 them, and said, " My doctrine is not
 " mine, but his that sent me. If any 17.

- The Temple. " man will do his will, he shall know Anno
John vii. " of the doctrine, whether it be of *Act. 32.*
" God, or *whether* I speak of my self. *Minist. 3.*
18. " He that speaketh of himself, seeketh
" his own glory; but he that seeketh
" his glory that sent him, the same is
" true, and no unrighteousness is in
19. " him. Did not Moses give you the
" law, and yet none of you keepeth
" the law? Why go ye about to kill
" me?
20. The people answered and said, *Thou*
hast a devil; who goeth about to kill
21. *thee?* Jesus answered and said unto
them, " I have done one work, and ye all
22. " marvel. Moses therefore gave unto
" you circumcision, (not because it is
" of Moses, but of the fathers) and ye
" on the sabbath day circumcise a man.
23. " If a man on the sabbath day re-
" ceive circumcision, that the law of
" Moses should not be broken; are ye
" angry at me, because I have made a
" man every whit whole on the sabbath
" day?
24. " Judge not according to the ap-
" pearance, but judge righteous judg-
" ment.
25. Then said some of them of Jerusa-
lem, *Is not this he whom they seek to*
26. *kill? But lo he speaketh boldly, and they*
say nothing unto him: Do the rulers
know indeed that this is the very Christ?
27. *Howbeit we know this man whence he is,*
but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth
whence he is.

Then

Anno 32. Then cried Jesus in the temple as he Taught, saying, "Ye both know me, The Temple.
 28. John vii.
 Minist. 3. "and ye know whence I am: and I
 "am not come of my self, but he that
 "sent me is true, whom ye know not.
 "But I know him, for I am from him; 29.
 "and he hath sent me. Then they 30.
 sought to take him: But no man laid
 hands on him, because his hour was
 not yet come.

And many of the people believ'd on 31.
 him, and said, *When Christ cometh, will
 he do more miracles than those which this
 man hath done?*

The Pharisees heard that the people 32.
 murmured such things concerning him;
 and the Pharisees and the chief Priests
 sent officers to take him. Then said 33.
 Jesus unto them, *Yet a little while am
 I with you, and then I go to him that
 sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall not 34.
 find me: and where I am, thither ye can-
 not come.*

Then said the Jews among themselves, 35.
*Whither will he go, that we shall not
 find him? Will he go to the dispersed a-
 mong the Gentiles, and teach the Gen-
 tiles? What manner of saying is this 36.
 that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall
 not find me; and where I am, thither ye
 cannot come?*

The Temple.

Anno

Ætar 32.

Minist. 3.

S E C T. LXXXV.

Jesus speaks again in the Temple the last day of the Feast. Some take him for a Prophet; others not, because he came out of Galilee. They seek again to lay hold on him.

- John vii. 37. **I**N the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, *If any man thirst, let him come unto me*
 38. *and drink. He that believeth on me,*
 39. *as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.* (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe should receive, for the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because
 40. that Jesus was not yet glorified) Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, *Of a truth this*
 41. *is the prophet.* Others said, *This is the Christ.* But some said, *Shall Christ*
 42. *come out of Galilee? Hath not the Scripture said, that Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethle-*
 43. *hem, where David was?* So there was a division among the people because
 44. of him. And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.
 45. Then came Officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, *Why have ye not brought him?*
 46. The officers answer'd, *Never man spake like this man.* Then answered them
 the

Anno 32. the Pharisees, *Are ye also deceived?* The Temple.
 Recar. 32. *Have any of the Rulers or of the Pha- 47. Joh. vii.
 Minist. 3. risees believed on him? But this people 48.
 who knoweth not the Law are cursed. 49.
 Nicodemus saith unto them, (He that 50.
 came to Jesus by night, being one of
 them) Doth our Law judge any man be- 51.
 fore it hear him, and know what he do-
 eth? They answered and said unto him, 52.
 Art thou also of Galilee? search and
 look; for out of Galilee ariseth no Pro-
 phet. And every man went to his own 53.
 house.*

S E C T. LXXXVI.

*The Judgment of Christ concerning an
 Adulteress.*

JESUS went unto the mount of ^{1. Joh. viii.}
 Olives: And early in the morning 2.
 he came again into the temple, and all
 the people came unto him; and he sat
 down, and taught them.

And the Scribes and Pharisees brought 3.
 unto him a woman taken in Adultery;
 and when they had set her in the mids,
 They say unto him, *Master, this wo- 4.
 man was taken in adultery, in the very
 act. Now Moses in the Law command- 5.
 ed us, that such should be stoned; but
 what sayest thou?* This they said, tempt- 6.
 ing him, that they might have to ac-
 cuse him. But Jesus stooped down,
 and with his finger wrote on the ground
 as tho' he heard them not.

So

- The Temple: So when they continued asking him, Anno
 Joh. viii. 7. he lift up himself, and said unto them, *Stat. 31*
Minist. 2
He that is without sin amongst you, let
 8. *him first cast a stone at her.* And again
 he stooped down, and wrote on the
 9. ground. And they which heard it, be-
 ing convicted in their own conscience,
 went out one by one; beginning at the
 eldest, even unto the last; and Jesus
 was left alone, and the woman standing
 in the midst.
10. When Jesus had lift up himself, and
 saw none but the woman, he said unto
 her, *Woman, where are those thine ac-*
cusers? hath no man condemned thee?
11. She said, *no man, Lord.* And Jesus said
 unto her, *Neither do I condemn thee:*
Go, and sin no more.

S E C T. LXXXVII.

*Jesus's Discourse concerning himself,
 and the depravity of the Jews of
 that Age.*

12. **T**HEN spake Jesus again unto them
 saying, *I am the light of the world:*
he that followeth me, shall not walk in
darkness; but shall have the light of
life.
13. The Pharisees therefore said unto him,
Thou bearest record of thy self; thy re-
cord is not true.
14. Jesus answered and said unto them,
 "Tho' I bear record of *my self*, yet my
 " record

10 " record is true: for I know whence I The Temple
 11 32- " came, and whither I go; but ye can- 14- Joh. viii.
 12 3- " not tell whence I come, and whither
 " I go. Ye judge after the flesh, I judge 15.
 " no man. And yet if I judge, my 16.
 " judgment is true: for I am not alone
 " but I and the Father that sent me.
 " It is also written in your Law, that the 17.
 " testimony of two men is true. I am 18.
 " one that bear witness of my self, and
 " the Father that sent me beareth wit-
 " nels of me.

Then said they unto him, *Where is 19.
 thy Father.*

Jesus answered, " Ye neither know
 " me, nor my Father: if ye had known
 " me, ye should have known my Fa-
 " ther also.

These words spake he in the treasury; 20.
 as he taught in the temple: and no man
 laid hands on him, for his hour was
 not yet come.

Then said Jesus again unto them, " I 21.
 " go my way, and ye shall seek me,
 " and shall dye in your sins: whither
 " I go ye cannot come.

Then said the Jews, *Will he kill 22.
 himself? because he saith, whither I go,
 ye cannot come.*

And he said unto them, " ye are from 23.
 " beneath, I am from above: ye are of
 " this world, I am not of this world.
 " I said therefore unto you, that ye shall 24.
 " die in your sins; for if ye believe not
 " that I am *he*, ye shall die in your
 " sins,

Then

The Temple. Then said they unto him, *Who art thou?* Anno
Joh. viii. 25. *thou?* Etat. 32.
Minist. 3.

And Jesus said unto them, "even *the*
" *same* that I said unto you from the
26. "beginning. I have many things to
"say, and to judge of you: but he
"that sent me, is true; and I speak to
"the world those things which I have
"heard of him.

27. They understood not that he spake
to them of the Father.

28. "Then said Jesus unto them, "when
"ye have lift up the son of man, then
"shall ye know that I am he, and *that*
"I do nothing of my self; but as my
"Father hath taught me, I speak these
29. "things. And he that sent me is with
"me: the Father hath not left me a-
"lone: for I do always those things
"that please him.

30. As he spake these words, many be-
31. lieved on him. Then said Jesus to
those Jews that believed on him:

"If ye continue in my word, *then*
32. "are ye my disciples indeed; and ye
"shall know the truth, and the truth
"shall make you free.

33. They answered him, *We be Abraham's*
seed, and were never in bondage to any
man; how sayest thou, ye shall be made
free?

34. Jesus answered them, "Verily, veri-
"ly I say unto you, whosoever com-
35. "mitteth sin, is the servant of sin. And
"the servant abideth not in the house
"for ever; but the son abideth ever.

If

10. " If the son therefore shall make you The Temple
 12. 32. " free, ye shall be free indeed. I know 35. Joh. viii.
 14. 3. " that ye are Abraham's seed ; but ye 37.
 " seek to kill me, because my word
 " hath no place in you. I speak that 38.
 " which I have seen with my Father. 39.
 " And ye do that which ye have seen
 " with your father.

They answered and said unto him, 39.
Abraham is our father.

Jesus saith unto them, " If ye were
 " Abraham's children, ye would do
 " the works of Abraham. But now, 40.
 " ye seek to kill me, a man that hath
 " told you the truth which I have heard
 " of God : this did not Abraham. Ye 41.
 " do the deeds of your father.

Then said they unto him, *We be not
 born of fornication; we have one Father,
 even God.*

Jesus said unto them, " If God were 42.
 " your Father, ye would love me : for
 " I proceeded forth, and came from
 " God ; neither came I of my self,
 " but he sent me. Why do ye not 43.
 " understand my speech ? even because
 " ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of 44.
 " your father the Devil, and the lusts of
 " your father ye will do : he was a
 " murderer from the beginning, and
 " abode not in the truth, because there
 " is no truth in him. When he speak-
 " eth a lye, he speaketh of his own :
 " for he is a liar, and the father of it.
 " And because I tell you the truth, ye 45.
 " believe me not. Which of you con- 46.
 " vinceth

- Jerusalem. the blind man with the clay, and he Anno
 Jer. 12. 1. said unto him, *Go wash in the (a) pool* Arar. 3.
 of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Ministr.
 sent.) He went his way therefore, and
 Miracle. 8. washed, and came seeing. The neigh-
 bours therefore, and they which before
 had seen him that he was blind, said
 9. *Is not this he that sat and begged?* Some
 said *This is he*: others said *he is like*
 10. *him*: but he said, *I am he*. Therefore
 said they unto him, *How were thine*
 11. *eyes opened?* He answered and said, *A*
man that is called Jesus, made clay, and
anointed mine eyes, and said unto me,
Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and
I went and washed, and I received sight.
 12. Then said they unto him, *Where is he?*
 13. He said, *I know not*. They brought to
 the Pharisees him that aforetime was
 blind.
 14. And it was the sabbath-day when Je-
 sus made the clay, and opened his eyes.
 15. Then again the Pharisees also asked
 him how he had received his sight. He
 said unto them, *He put clay upon mine*
 16. *eyes, and I washed and do see*. There-
 fore said some of the Pharisees, *This*
man is not of God, because he keepeth
not the sabbath-day. Others said, *How*
can a man that is a sinner, do such mi-

(a) Pool of Siloam Was a Pool that stood near the sheep market in Jerusalem wherein the Priests used to wash the sheep that were for the sacrifice; it received its water from the fountain of Siloe at the foot of mount Sion; it is called also the pool of Bethesda.

rales? and there was a division a-^{18.} Jerusalem.
^{2.} mong them. Joh. ix.

^{3.} They say unto the blind Man again,
*What sayest thou of him, that he hath
 opened thine eyes?* He said, *he is a
 prophet.*

But the Jews did not believe con-^{18.}
 cerning him, that he had been blind,
 and received his sight, until they call'd
 the Parents of him that had receiv'd
 his sight. And they asked them, say-^{19.}
 ing, *Is this your Son, who ye say was born
 blind? how then doth he now see?* His^{20.}
 Parents answered them and said, *We
 know that this is our son, and that he was
 born blind: But by what means he now*^{21.}
*seeth, we know not; or who hath opened
 his eyes we know not: he is of age, ask him,
 he shall speak for himself.* These words^{22.}
 spake his Parents, because they feared
 the Jews: For the Jews had agreed al-
 ready, that if any Man did confess that
 he was Christ, he should be put out of
 the Synagogue. Therefore said his Pa-^{23.}
 rents, *He is of age, ask him.*

Then again call'd they the Man that^{24.}
 was blind, and said unto him, *Give
 God the praise. We know that this man
 is a sinner.* He answered and said,^{25.}
*Whether he be a sinner or no, I know
 not: one thing I know, that whereas I
 was blind, now I see.* Then said they^{26.}
 to him again, *What did he to thee? how
 opened he thine eyes?* He answer'd them,^{27.}
*I have told you already, and ye did not
 hear: wherefore should you hear it again?*

M

will

Jerusalem.
Joh. ix.

28. *will ye also be his disciples ? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple ; but we are Moses disciples. We*
 29. *know that God spake unto Moses : as for this fellow, we know not from whence*
 30. *he is. The Man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God beareth not sinners : but if any Man be a worshipper of God, and doth his will, him he hear-*
 31. *eth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of*
 32. *one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.*
 33. *They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us ? And they cast him out.*
 34. *Jesus heard that they had cast him out ; and when he found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the son*
 35. *of God ? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on*
 36. *him ? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that*
 37. *talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.*

Anno
Ætæ.
Minist.

o
t. 32.
st. 13

Jerusalem.

SECT. LXXXIX.

Jesus shews that he is the true Shepherd, and that he must lay down his Life for his Sheep. The Jews are divided in their Opinion concerning him.

AND Jesus said, *For judgment I am* 39. *John 12:*
come into this world: that they
which see not, might see; and that they
which see, might be made blind. And 40.
 some of the Pharisees which were with
 him heard these Words, and said unto
 him, *Are we blind also?* Jesus said
 unto them, "If ye were blind, ye 41.
 "should have no Sin: but now ye say
 "we see; therefore that Sin remain-
 "eth. Verily, verily I say unto you, i. Joh. x:
 "He that entreth not by the Door in-
 "to the Sheepfold, but climbeth up
 "some other way, the same is a Thief
 "and a Robber. But he that entreth 2.
 "in by the Door, is the Shepherd of
 "the Sheep. To him the Porter open-
 "eth; and the Sheep hear his voice;
 "and he calleth his own Sheep by 3.
 "name, and leadeth them out. And 4.
 "when he putteth forth his own Sheep,
 "he goeth before them, and the Sheep
 "follow him: for they know his voice.
 "And a Stranger will they not follow, 5.
 "but will flee from him: for they
 "know not the voice of Strangers.

M 2

This

Jerusalem.
Joh. x.

- This Parable spake Jesus unto them : Anno
 6. but they understood not what things *Ætat. 32.*
 they were which he spake unto them. *Minist. 3.*
7. Then said Jesus unto them again.
 8. " Verily, verily I say unto you, I am
 9. " the Door of the Sheep. All that
 " ever came before me, are Thieves
 " and Robbers: but the Sheep did not
 " hear them. I am the Door, by me
 10. " if any Man enter in, he shall be sa-
 " ved, and shall go in and out, and
 " find pasture. The Thief cometh not
 " but for to steal, and to kill, and to
 " destroy: I am come that they might
 " have Life, and that they might have
 11. " it more abundantly. I am the good
 " Shepherd: the good Shepherd giveth
 12. " his Life for the Sheep. But he that
 " is an Hireling and not the Shepherd,
 " whose own the Sheep are not, seeth
 " the Wolf coming, and leaveth the
 " Sheep, and fleeth: and the Wolf
 " catcheth them, and scattereth the
 13. " Sheep. The Hireling fleeth, because
 " he is an Hireling, and careth not for
 14. " the Sheep. I am the good Shepherd,
 " and know my Sheep, and am known
 15. " of mine. As the Father knoweth
 " me, even so know I the Father, and
 " I lay down my Life for the Sheep.
 16. " And other Sheep I have, which
 " are not of this fold: them also I
 " must bring, and they shall hear my
 " voice; there shall be one Fold, and
 " one Shepherd. Therefore doth my
 17. " Father love me, because I lay down
 my

Anno " my Life, that I might take it again. Jerusalem.
 Eccl. 22. " No man taketh it from me, but I lay 18. Joh. x.
 Minist. 3. " it down of my self: I have power to
 " lay it down, and I have power to
 " take it again. This Commandment
 " have I received of my Father.

There was a division therefore again 19.
 among the Jews for these sayings. And
 many of them said, *He hath a devil and*
is mad; why hear ye him? Others said, 20.
These are not the words of him that
hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes
of the blind?

SECT. XC.

The Seventy Disciples return to Je-
sus. His Discourse with them.

AND the seventy returned again 17. Luk. x.
 with joy, saying, *Lord, even the*
devils are subject unto us through thy
name. And [*Jesus*] said unto them, 18.
 " I beheld Satan as lightning, fall from
 " Heaven, Behold I give unto you 19.
 " power to tread on Serpents and Scor-
 " pions, and over all the power of the
 " Enemy; and nothing shall by any
 " means hurt you. Notwithstanding 20.
 " in this rejoice not, that the Spirits
 " are subject to you: but rather re-
 " joice because your names are written
 " in heaven.

In that Hour Jesus rejoiced in Spirit, 21.
 and said, " I thank thee, O Father,

M 3

Lord

Jerusalem.
Luk. x.

- " Lord of Heaven and Earth, that thou Anno
 " hast hid these things from the wise *Mat. 32,*
 " and prudent, and hast revealed them *Minist. 3.*
 " unto babes: even so, Father, for so
 " it seemed good in thy sight.
22. " All things are deliver'd to me of
 " my Father: and no Man knoweth
 " who the Son is, but the Father; and
 " who the Father is, but the Son, and
 " he to whom the Son will reveal
 " him.
23. And he turn'd him unto his Disciples,
 and said privately, " Blessed are the
 " Eyes which see the things that ye
 24. " see. For I tell you, that many Pro-
 phets and Kings have desired to see
 " those things which ye see, and have
 " not seen them; and to hear those
 " things which ye hear, and have not
 " heard them.

S E C T. XCI.

*Jesus's Answer to a Lawyer, who in-
 quired of him the way to obtain
 eternal Life. Shews who is our
 Neighbour.*

25. **A**ND behold, a certain Lawyer stood
 up, and tempted [*Jesus,*] saying,
 Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal
 26. life? He said unto him, What is written
 in the Law? how readest thou? And he
 27. answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord
 thy God with all thy heart, and with all
 thy

O *thy soul, and with all thy strength, Jerusalem.*
 L. 32. *and with all thy mind; and thy neigh-* Luk: x.
 st. 3. *bour as thy self.* And he said unto him, 28.
Thou hast answered right: this do and
thou shalt live. But he willing to justi- 29.
fy himself, said unto Jesus, *And who*
is my neighbour? And Jesus answer- 30.
 ing, said, "A certain Man went down
 "from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell
 "among thieves, which stripped him
 "of his raiment, and wounded him,
 "and departed, leaving him half dead.
 "And by chance there came down a 31.
 "certain Priest that way; and when he
 "saw him, he passed by on the other
 "side. And likewise a Levite, when 32.
 "he was at the place, came, and look-
 "ed on him, and passed by on the
 "other side. But a certain Samaritan, 33.
 "as he journied, came where he was:
 "and when he saw him, he had com-
 "passion on him, and went to him, 34.
 "and bound up his wounds, pouring
 "in oil and wine, and set him on his
 "own beast, and brought him to an 35.
 "Inn, and took care of him. And on
 "the morrow when he departed, he
 "took out two pence, and gave them
 "to the host, and said unto him, Take
 "care of him; and whatsoever thou
 "spendest more, when I come again,
 "I will repay thee. Which now of 36.
 "these three, thinkest thou, was neigh-
 "bour to him that fell among the
 "thieves? And he said, he that shew- 37.
 "ed mercy on him. Then said Jesus

Jerusalem.
Luk. x.

“ unto him, Go, and do thou like
“ wife,

Anno
Ætat. 32.
Minist. 3.

S E C T. XCII.

Jesus is entertained by Martha and Mary.

Bethany,
Luk. x.

38. **N**OW it came to pass, as they went, that [*Jesus*] entred into a certain Village, and a certain Woman named *Martha*, received him into her
39. house. And she had a Sister called *Mary*, which also sat at *Jesus* feet, and
40. heard his word. But *Martha* was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, *Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.*
41. And *Jesus* answered, and said unto her, *Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and*
42. *troubled about many things. But one thing is needful. And Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.*

S E C T. XCIII.

One of Jesus's Disciples asketh him to teach him to pray: His Answer and Discourse about Prayer.

xi.

1. **A**ND it came to pass, that as [*Jesus*] was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his Disciples

nno ciples said unto him, *Lord, teach us to Bethany.*
 pray, as John also taught his disciples. *Luk. xi.*
 itat. 32.
 inist. 3.

And he said unto them, " When ye 2.
 " pray say, Our Father which art in
 " heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy
 " Kingdom come. Thy will be done,
 " as in heaven, so in earth. Give us 3.
 " day by day our daily bread. And for- 4.
 " give us our sins; for we also forgive
 " every one that is indebted to us. And
 " lead us not into temptation, but de-
 " liver us from evil.

And he said unto them, " Which of 5.
 " you shall have a friend, and shall go
 " unto him at mid-night, and say un-
 " to him, Friend, lend me three loaves; 6.
 " a friend of mine in his journey is come
 " to me, and I have nothing to set be-
 " fore him: And he from within shall 7.
 " answer and say, Trouble me not:
 " the door is now shut, and my Chil-
 " dren are with me in bed; I cannot
 " rise and give thee.

" I say unto you, Though he will 8.
 " not rise and give him because he is
 " his friend; yet because of his impor-
 " tunity, he will rise and give him as
 " many as he needeth. And I say un- 9.
 " to you, Ask, and it shall be given
 " you: seek and ye shall find: knock
 " and it shall be open'd unto you. For 10.
 " every one that asketh, receiveth: and
 " he that seeketh findeth: and to him
 " that knocketh it shall be opened. If 11.
 " a son shall ask bread of any of you
 " that is a father, will he give him a
 " stone?

Bethany.
Luk. xi.

12. "stone? or if he ask a fish, will he
"for a fish give him a Serpent? or if he
"shall ask an egg, will he offer him
13. "a scorpion? If ye then being evil,
"know how to give good gifts unto
"your Children, how much more shall
"your heavenly Father give the holy
"Spirit to them that ask him?

Anno
Aet. 31
Minist. 3.

S E C T. XCIV.

*Jesus cures one possess'd with a
Dumb Daemon, which Miracle
Christ maintains against the Ca-
lummy of the Pharisees. Shews
who are blessed, and treats of the
Obstinacy of the Jews who required
a Miracle.*

Luk. xi.

14. **A**ND [*Jesus*] was casting out a
Devil, and it was dumb. And it
came to pass, when the Devil was gone
out, the dumb spake: and the people
15. wondred. But some of them said, *He
casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the
chief of the devils.*
16. And others tempting him, sought of
17. him a sign from heaven. But he know-
ing their thoughts, said unto them,
"Every kingdom divided against it
"self, is brought to desolation: and a
"house divided against a house falleth.
18. "If Satan also be divided against him-
"self, how shall his kingdom stand?
"because ye say that I cast out devils
"through

12. " through Beelzebub: and if I by Beel- Bethany.
 13. " zebub cast out devils, by whom do Luk. xi.
 " your sons cast them out? there- 19.
 " fore they shall be your judges. But 20.
 " if I with the finger of God cast out
 " devils, no doubt the kingdom of God
 " is come upon you. When a strong 21.
 " man armed keepeth his palace, his
 " goods are in peace. But when a 22.
 " stronger than he shall come upon him,
 " and overcome him, he taketh from
 " him all his armour wherein he trust-
 " ed, and divideth his spoils.

" He that is not with me is against 23.
 " me; and he that gathereth not with
 " me scattereth. When the unclean 24.
 " Spirit is gone out of a man, he walk-
 " eth through dry places, seeking rest
 " and finding none, he saith, I will
 " return unto my house whence I came
 " out. And when he cometh he find- 25.
 " eth it swept and garnished. Then 26.
 " goeth he, and taketh to him seven
 " other Spirits more wicked than him-
 " self, and they enter in and dwell
 " there: and the last state of the man
 " is worse than the first.

And it came to pass as he spake 27.
 these things, a certain woman of the
 company lift up her voice, and said
 unto him, *Blessed is the womb that bare*
thee, and the paps which thou hast suck-
ed. But he said, Yea, rather blessed are 28,
they that hear the word of God and
keep it.

And

- Bethany. 4 And when the people were gathered Anno
Luk. xi. 29. thick together, he began to say, " This *Ætat. 32*
" is an evil generation: they seek a *Minist.*
" sign, and there shall no sign be given
" it, but the sign of Jonas the pro-
30. " phet. For as Jonas was a sign to
" the Ninivites, so shall also the Son
31. " of Man be to this generation. The
" (a) Queen of the south shall rise up
" in the judgment with the men of
" this generation, and condemn them;
" for she came from the utmost parts
" of the earth, to hear the wisdom of
" Solomon, and behold a greater than
32. " Solomon is here. The men of (b) Ni-
" niveh shall rise up in the judgment
" with this generation, and shall con-
" demn it: for they repented at the
" preaching of Jonas; and behold a
33. " greater than Jonas is here. No man
" when he hath lighted a candle, put-
" teth it in a secret place, neither un-
" der a bushel; but on a candlestick,
" that they which come in may see the
34. " light. The light of the body is the
" eye: therefore when thine eye is
" single, thy whole body also is full
" of light: but when thine eye is evil,
" thy body also is full of darkness.

(a) *Queen of the South.* In 1 Kings x. i. She is call'd the Queen of *Sheba* or *Saba*, the Metropolis of *Sabaa*, a part of *Arabia felix*, which lay south from *Jerusalem*.

(b) *Niniveh*, a very great Town, on the East side of the River *Tigris*, the Metropolis of *Assyria*.

" Take

32. " Take heed therefore that the light ^{Bethany.}
 33. " which is in thee be not darkness. ^{Luk xi.}
 34. " If thy whole body therefore be full ^{35.}
 35. " of light, having no part dark, the ^{36.}
 36. " whole shall be full of light, as when
 37. " the bright shining of a candle doth
 38. " give thee light.

S E C T. XCV.

Jesus is invited to Dinner by a Pharisee, he inveighs against the Hypocrites who laid Snares for him.

AND as [*Jesus*] spake, a certain ^{37.}
 Pharisee besought him to dine
 with him: and he went in and sat
 down to meat. And when the Phari- ^{38.}
 see saw it, he marvelled that he had
 not first washed before dinner. And ^{39.}
 the Lord said unto him, " Now do
 " ye Pharisees make clean the outside
 " of the cup and the platter: but your
 " inward part is full of ravening and
 " wickedness. Ye fools, did not he ^{40.}
 " that made that which is without,
 " make that which is within also?
 " But rather give alms of such things ^{41.}
 " as ye have: and behold all such
 " things are clean unto you. But wo ^{42.}
 " unto you Pharisees: for ye tithe mint
 " and rue, and all manner of herbs,
 " and pass over judgment and the love
 " of

- Bethany.
Luk. xi.
- “ of God : these ye ought to have done, Anno
“ and not to leave the other undone. ^{Star.}
43. “ Wo unto your Pharisees, for ye love ^{Minist.}
“ the uppermost seats in the Synagogue,
44. “ and greetings in the Markets. Wo
“ unto you Scribes and Pharisees, Hy-
“ pocrites : for ye are as graves which
“ appear not, and the men that walk
“ over them, are not aware of them;
“ Then answered one of the Lawyers,
45. “ and said unto him, *Master, thus*
46. *saying, thou reproachest us also.* And
“ he said, “ Wo unto you also ye Law-
“ yers; for ye lade men with burthens
“ grievous to be born, and ye your
“ selves touch not the burthens with
47. “ one of your fingers. Wo unto you :
“ for ye build the Sepulchres of the
“ Prophets, and your Fathers kill’d
48. “ them. Truly ye bear Witness that
“ ye allow the deeds of your Fathers :
“ for they indeed killed them, and ye
49. “ build their Sepulchres. Therefore
“ also said the wisdom of God, I will
“ send them Prophets and Apostles,
“ and some of them they shall slay
50. “ and persecute: That the blood of all
“ the Prophets, which was shed from
“ the foundation of the world, may be
51. “ required of this generation; from the
“ blood of Abel unto the blood of Za-
“ charias, which perished between the
“ altar and the temple: Verily I say
“ unto you, it shall be required of this
52. “ generation. Wo unto you Lawyers :
“ for ye have taken away the key of
“ know-

“ knowledge: ye entred not in your Bethany.
 32. “ selves, and them that were entring Luke xi.
 b 3. “ in, ye hindred.

And as he said these things unto 53,
 them, the Scribes and Pharisees began
 to urge him vehemently, and to provoke
 him to speak of many things: laying
 wait for him, and seeking to catch some- 54.
 thing out of his mouth, that they might
 accuse him.

S E C T. XCVI.

*Divers Precepts of Christ concerning
 the Leaven of the Pharisees, of
 preaching the Gospel boldly, and
 with plainness, of the Sin against
 the Holy Ghost, Avarice, Anxiety
 for things to come, Liberality to
 the Poor, Watchfulness, the Dis-
 sentions that shall arise from the
 preaching of the Gospel through
 the pravity of Mankind; of the
 Signs of the coming of the Messiah,
 and reconciling our selves to our
 Enemies.*

I N the mean time, when there were 1. Luk. xii.
 gathered together an innumerable
 multitude of people, insomuch that
 they trod one upon another, [Jesus]
 began to say to his disciples first of all,
 “ Beware ye of the leaven of the Pha-
 risees,

Bethany.
Luk. xii.

2. " rises, which is hypocrisy. For there
" is nothing covered, that shall not be
" revealed; neither hid, that shall not
3. " be known. Therefore whatsoever ye
" have spoken in darkness, shall be
" heard in the light: and that which
" ye have spoken in the ear in closets,
" shall be proclaimed upon the house
4. " top. And I say unto you my friends,
" Be not afraid of them that kill the
" body, and after that have no more
5. " that they can do. But I will fore-
" warn you whom ye shall fear: Fear
" him which after he hath killed, hath
" power to cast into hell; yea, I say
" unto you, fear him.
6. " Are not five sparrows sold for two
" farthings, and not one of them is for-
7. " gotten before God? But even the very
" hairs of your head are all numbred.
" Fear not therefore: ye are of more
" value than many sparrows.
8. " Also I say unto you, whosoever
" shall confess me before men, him
" shall the Son of Man also confess be-
9. " fore the angels of God. But he that
" denieth me before men, shall be deni-
10. " ed before the angels of God. And who-
" soever shall speak a word against the
" Son of Man, it shall be forgiven
" him: but to him that blasphemeth
" against the Holy Ghost, it shall not
" be forgiven.
11. " And when they bring you to the
" synagogues, and to magistrates and
" powers, take ye no thought how or
" what

Anno
Erat. 3:
Minist. :

no " what thing ye shall answer, or what Bethany.
 at. 32. " ye shall say: For the Holy Ghost Luk. xiii.
 sist. 3. " shall teach you in the same hour 12.
 " what ye ought to say.

And one of the company said unto him, *Master, speak to my brother that* 13.
he divide the inheritance with me. And he said unto him, " Man, who made 14.
 " me a judge, or a divider over you? And he said unto them, " Take heed, 15.
 " and beware of covetousness: for a " man's life consisteth not in the abun-
 " dance of the things which he pos- " sesseth. And he spake a parable to 16.
 them, saying, " The ground of a cer- " tain rich man brought forth plenti-
 " fully, and he thought within him- 17.
 " self, saying, What shall I do; because " I have no room where to bestow my
 " fruits? And he said this will I do: 18.
 " I will pull down my barns, and " build greater; and there will I be-
 " stow all my fruits and my goods. " And I will say to my soul: Soul, 19.
 " thou hast much goods laid up for " many years: take thine ease, eat,
 " drink and be merry. But God said 20.
 " unto him, Thou fool, this night thy " soul shall be required of thee: then
 " whose shall those things be which " thou hast provided? So is he that 21.
 " layeth up treasure for himself, and " is not rich towards God.

And he said unto his disciples, 22.
 " Therefore I say unto you, Take no " thought for your life, what ye shall

N

" eat,

- Bethany. " eat; neither for the body, what ye Anno
 Luk. xii. " shall put on. The life is more than *Ætat.*
 23. " meat, and the body is more than *Minist*
 24. " ment. Consider the ravens: for they
 " neither sow nor reap; which nei-
 " ther have store-house nor barn; and
 " God feedeth them: How much more
 25. " are ye better than the fowls? And
 " which of you with taking thought
 " can add to his stature one cubit?
 26. " If ye then be not able to do that
 " thing which is least, why take ye
 " thought for the rest?
 27. " Consider the lilies how they grow:
 " They toil not, they spin not: and
 " yet I say unto you, that Solomon in
 " all his glory, was not array'd like
 28. " one of these. If then God so clothe
 " the grass, which is to day in the
 " field, and to morrow is cast into the
 " oven: how much more will he clothe
 29. " you, O ye of little faith? And seek
 " not ye what ye shall eat, or what
 " ye shall drink, neither be ye of
 30. " doubtful mind. For all these things
 " do the nations of the world seek
 " after: and your father knoweth that
 31. " ye have need of these things. But
 " rather seek ye the kingdom of God,
 " and all these things shall be added
 32. " unto you. Fear not little flock; for
 " it is your Father's good pleasure to
 " give you the kingdom.
 33. " Sell that ye have, and give alms;
 " provide your selves bags which wax
 " not old, a treasure in the heavens
 that

“ that faileth not, where no thief ap- Bethany.
 32. “ proacheth, neither moth corrupteth. Luk. xii.
 ft. 3. “ For where the treasure, is there will 34.
 “ your heart be also.

“ Let your Loyns be girded about, 35.
 “ and your lights burning; and ye your 36.
 “ selves like unto men that wait for
 “ their Lord, when he will return from
 “ the wedding, that when he cometh
 “ and knocketh, they may open unto
 “ him immediately.

“ Blessed are those servants, whom 37.
 “ the Lord, when he cometh, shall find
 “ watching. Verily I say unto you, that
 “ he shall gird himself, and make them
 “ to sit down to meat, and will come
 “ forth and serve them. And if he 38.
 “ shall come in the second watch, or
 “ come in the third watch, and find
 “ them so; blessed are those servants.
 “ And this know, that if the good 39.
 “ man of the house had known what
 “ hour the thief would come, he would
 “ have watched, and not have suffered
 “ his house to be broken through. Be 40.
 “ ye therefore ready also: for the Son
 “ of man cometh at an hour where ye
 “ think not.

Then Peter said unto him, Lord, 41.
*speakest thou this parable unto us, or
 even to all?*

And the Lord said, “ Who then is 42.
 “ that faithful and wise steward, whom
 “ his Lord shall make ruler over his
 “ household to give them their portion
 “ of meat in due season? Blessed is 43.
 “ that

- Bethany. " that servant, whom his Lord when Anno
 Luk. xii. " he cometh shall find so doing. Of ^{Exat. 3}
 44. " a truth I say unto you, that he will ^{Minist. 3}
 " make him ruler over all that he hath.
 45. " But and if that servant say in his
 " heart, My Lord delayeth his com-
 " ing; and shall begin to beat the men-
 " servants, and maidens, and to eat
 46. " and drink, and to be drunken: The
 " Lord of that servant will come in a
 " day when he looketh not for him,
 " and at an hour when he is not aware,
 " and will cut him in sunder, and will
 " appoint him his portion with the
 47. " unbelievers. And that servant which
 " knew his Lord's will, and prepared
 " not himself, neither did according to
 " his will, shall be beaten with many
 48. " stripes. But he that knew not,
 " and did commit things worthy of
 " stripes, shall be beaten with few
 " stripes. For unto whomsoever much
 " is given, of him shall be much re-
 " quired: and to whom men have
 " committed much, of him they will
 " ask the more.
 49. " I am come to send fire on earth;
 " what will I if it be already kindled?
 50. " But I have a baptism to be baptized
 " with, and how am I straitned till
 51. " it be accomplished! Suppose ye that
 " I am come to give peace on earth?
 " I tell you, nay; but rather division.
 52. " For from henceforth there shall be
 " five in one house divided, three a-
 " gainst two, and two against three.
 " The

„ The father shall be divided against Bethany.
t 32. „ the son, and the son against the fa- Luk. xii.
ft. 3. „ ther: the mother against the daugh- 53.
„ ther, and the daughter against the
„ mother: the mother-in-law against
„ the daughter-in-law; and the daugh-
„ ter-in-law against the mother-in-
„ law.

„ And he said also to the people, 54.
„ When ye see a cloud rise out of the
„ west, straightway ye say, There com-
„ eth a shower; and so it is.

„ And when ye see the south wind 55.
„ blow, ye say, There will be heat;
„ and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, 56.
„ ye can discern the face of the sky,
„ and of the earth: but how is it, that
„ ye do not discern this time? Yea, 57.
„ and why even of your selves judge
„ ye not what is right? When thou 58.
„ goest with thine adversary to the
„ magistrate, as thou art in the way,
„ give diligence that thou mayest be
„ delivered from him; lest he hale
„ thee to the judge, and the judge de-
„ liver thee to the officer, and the
„ officer cast thee into prison. I tell 59.
„ thee, thou shalt not depart thence,
„ till thou hast paid the very last
„ mite.

Galilee.
Luk. xiii.

S E C T. XCVII.

Anno 3
Ætat.
Minist.

Jesus informs his hearers that Misfortunes very often happen to Men not worse than others. The Parable of the Fig-tree.

1. **T**Here were present^d at the season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled
2. with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering, said unto them, "Suppose ye that
3. "these Galileans were finners above all
4. "the Galileans, because they suffered
5. "such things? I tell you, Nay, but except ye repent ye shall all likewise
6. "perish. Or those eighteen, upon
7. "whom the towre in Siloam fell, and
8. "flew them, think ye that they were
9. "finners above all men that dwelt in
10. "Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay : but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.
11. He spake also this parable, "A certain man had a fig-tree planted in
12. "his vineyard, and he came and sought
13. "fruit thereon, and found none. Then
14. "said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold these three years I come
15. "seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and
16. "find none: Cut it down, why cumbereth it the ground? And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let
17. "it alone this year also, till I shall
18. "dig about it, and dung it: And if
19. "it

o "it bear fruit, well: and if not, then Galilee.
 t. 32. " after that thou shalt cut it down. Luk. xiii.
 ft. 3.

S E C T. XCVIII.

The Cure of a Woman on the Sabbath-day, which Christ maintains against the Cavils of the Ruler of the Synagogue.

AND [Jesus] was teaching in one 10.
 of the Synagogues on the Sabbath. And behold, there was a wo- 11.
 man which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her self. And when Jesus saw her, he 12.
 called her to him, and said unto her, *Woman thou art loosed from thine infirmity*, And he laid his hands on her, 13.
 and immediately she was made straight, 14. *Miracle.*
 and glorified God. And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath-day, and said unto the people, *There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.* The Lord then answered him, 15.
 and said, "Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of ye on the Sabbath-day, loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a 16.
 N 4 " daughter

Galilee,
Luk. xiii.

“ a daughter of Abraham, whom Sa- Anno
“ tan hath bound, lo, these eighteen Ætat. 32
“ years, be loosed from this bond on Ministr. 3
“ the sabbath day ?

17. And when he had said these things,
all his adversaries were ashamed : and
all the people rejoiced for all the glori-
ous things that were done by him.

18. Then said he, “ Unto what is the
“ kingdom of God like? and where-

19. “ unto shall I resemble it? It is like a
“ grain of Mustard-seed, which a man
“ took, and cast into his garden, and
“ it grew, and waxed a great tree :

20. “ and the fowls of the air lodged in
“ the branches of it. And again he
said, “ Whereunto shall I liken the

21. “ kingdom of God? It is like leaven,
“ which a Woman took and hid in three
“ measures of meal, till the whole was
“ leavened.

S E C T. XCIX.

*Jesus is going towards Jerusalem : His
answer to one that asked if many
should be saved.*

22. **A**ND [*Jesus*] went through all ci-
ties and villages, teaching and

23. journeying towards Jerusalem. Then
said one unto him, Lord, *are there few*
that be saved? And he said unto them,

24. “ Strive to enter in at the strait gate ;
“ for many I say unto you will seek to
“ enter

o " enter in, and shall not be able. When Galilee.
 it. 32. " once the master of the house is risen up, 25. Luk. xiii.
 ist. 3. " and hath shut to the door, and ye begin
 " to stand without and to knock at the
 " door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us;
 " and he shall answer and say unto you,
 " I know you not whence you are. Then 26.
 " shall ye begin to say, We have eaten
 " and drunk in thy presence, and thou
 " hast taught in our streets. But he 27.
 " shall say, I tell you, I know not
 " whence you are; depart from me all
 " ye workers of iniquity. There shall 28.
 " be weeping and gnashing of teeth,
 " when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac,
 " and Jacob, and all the prophets in
 " the kingdom of God, and you your
 " selves thrust out. And they shall 29.
 " come from the east, and from the
 " west, and from the north, and from
 " the south, and shall sit in the king-
 " dom of God: And behold there are 30:
 " last which shall be first, and there
 " are first which shall be last.

SECT. C.

*Jesus is warned of Herod, he foretells
 his Death at Jerusalem.*

THE same day there came certain 31.
 of the Pharisees, saying unto him;
Get thee out, and depart hence: for
Herod will kill thee. And he said unto 32.
 them, " Go ye and tell that fox, Be-
 " hold I cast out Devils, and I do cures
 " to

- Galilee. Anno
Luk. xiii. 33. " to day and to morrow, and the third Ætat. 3.
" day I shall be perfected. Neverthe- Ministr.
" less I must walk to day and to mor-
" row, and the day following: for it
" cannot be that a prophet perish out
34. " of Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, Jerusa-
" lem, which killest the prophets, and
" stonest them that are sent to thee:
" How often would I have gathered
" thy children together, as a hen doth
" gather her brood under her wings,
35. " and ye would not? Behold your
" house is left to you desolate: and
" verily I say unto you, Ye shall not
" see me, until the time come when
" ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh
" in the name of the Lord.

S E C T. C I.

*A Man sick of the Dropsy cured by
Jesus on the Sabbath-day. Advice
concerning taking the lowest place
at a Banquet, and inviting the Poor.
The Parable of the Supper.*

- Luk. xiv. 1. **A**ND it came to pass, as he went
into the house of one of the chief
Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-
2. day, that they watched him. And be-
hold, there was a certain man before
3. him which had the dropsy. And Jesus
answering, spake unto the Lawyers and
Pharisees, saying, *Is it lawful to heal on*
4. *the sabbath day?* And they held their
peace.

o peace. And he took him and healed Galilee.
it. 32. him, and let him go : And answered Luk. xiv.
ist. 3. them, saying, *Which of you shall have 5, Miracle.*
an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and
will not straightway pull him out on the
sabbath day? And they could not an- 6.
swer him again to these things.

And he put forth a parable to those 7.
which were bidden, when he marked
how they chose out the chief rooms ;
saying unto them, " When thou art bid- 8.
den of any man to a wedding, sit
" not down in the highest room, lest
" a more honourable man than thou be
" bidden of him ; and he that had thee 9.
" and him, come and say to thee, Give
" this man place, and thou begin with
" shame to take the lowest room. But 10.
" when thou art bidden, go, and sit in
" the lowest room ; that when he that
" had thee cometh, he may say unto
" thee, Friend, go up higher : then
" shalt thou have worship in the pre-
" sence of them that sit at meat with
" thee. For whosoever exalteth himself, 11.
" shall be abased, and he that hum-
" bleth himself, shall be exalted.

Then said he also to him that bad 12.
him, " When thou makest a dinner or
" a supper, call not thy friend, nor
" thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor
" thy rich neighbours ; lest they also
" bid thee again, and a recompence be
" made thee. But when thou makest 13.
" a feast, call the poor, the maimed,
" the lame, the blind : And thou shalt
" be

Galilee.

Luk. xiv.

14. " be blessed ; for they cannot recom-
 " pence thee : for thou shalt be re-
 " compenced at the resurrection of the
 " just.
15. And when one of them that sat at
 meat with him, heard these things, he
 said unto him, *Blessed is he that shall eat*
 16. *bread in the kingdom of God.* Then
 said he unto him, " A certain man
 " made a great supper, and bad many :
 17. " And sent his servant at supper time
 " to say to them that were bidden,
 " Come, for all things are now ready.
 18. " And they all with one consent began
 " to make excuse. The first said unto
 " him, I have bought a piece of ground,
 " and I must needs go and see it: I
 19. " pray thee have me excused. And
 " another said, I have bought five yoke
 " of oxen, and I go to prove them : I
 20. " pray thee have me excused. And a-
 " nother said, I have married a wife,
 21. " and therefore cannot come. So that
 " servant came and shewed his Lord
 " these things. Then the master of
 " the house being angry, said to his
 " servant, go out quickly into the streets
 " and lanes of the city, and bring in
 " hither the poor and the maimed, and
 22. " the halt, and the blind. And the ser-
 " vant said, Lord, it is done as thou
 " hast commanded, and yet there is
 " room. And the Lord said unto the
 23. " servant, Go out into the highways
 " and hedges, and compel them to
 " come in, that my house may be fill'd.

For

Anno
Ætat. 32.
Minist. 3.

mo " For I say unto you, that none of those Galilee.
 tat. 22. " men which were bidden, shall taste 24. Luk. xiv.
 nist. 3. " of my supper.

S E C T. CII.

*Great Multitudes follow Jesus; he
 tells his Disciples what resolution
 of Mind they ought to be endu'd
 with.*

AND there went great multitudes 25.
 with [Jesus] and he turned, and 26.
 said unto them, " If any man come to
 " me, and hate not his father, and mo-
 " ther, and wife, and children, and bre-
 " thren, and sisters, yea, and his own life
 " also, he cannot be my disciple. And 27.
 " whosoever doth not bear his cross, and
 " come after me, cannot be my disci-
 " ple. For which of you intending to 28.
 " build a towre, sitteth not down first,
 " and counteth the cost, whether he
 " have sufficient to finish it: Lest hap- 29.
 " ly after he hath laid the foundation,
 " and is not able to finish it, all that
 " behold it, begin to mock him, say-
 " ing, This man began to build, and 30.
 " was not able to finish. Or what king 31.
 " going to make war against another
 " king, sitteth not down first, and con-
 " sulteth whether he be able with ten
 " thousand men to meet him that com-
 " eth against him with twenty thou-
 " sand: Or else, while the other is 32.
 " yet

- Galilee. " yet a great way off, he sendeth an Anno
 Luk. xiv. " embassage, and desireth conditions of *Atat. 32*
 33. " peace. So likewise, whosoever he be *Minist. 3*
 34. " of you, that forsaketh not all that he
 " hath, he cannot be my disciple. Salt
 " is good: but if the salt have lost
 " his flavour, wherewith shall it be
 35. " seasoned? It is neither fit for the
 " land, nor yet for the dunghil; but
 " men cast it out. He that hath ears to
 " hear, let him hear.

S E C T. CIII.

Jesus delivers several Parables, representing the care God takes of the greatest Sinners, and the kindness with which he receives the truly Penitent.

- Luk. xv. 1. **T**hen drew near to [*Jesus*] all the
 2. Publicans and Sinners for to hear
 3. him. And the Pharisees and Scribes
 4. murmured, saying, *This man receiveth*
 5. *sinners, and eateth with them.* And he
 6. spake this parable to them, saying,
 " What man of you having an hun-
 " dred sheep, if he lose one of them,
 " doth not leave the ninety and nine
 " in the wilderness, and go after that
 " which is lost, until he find it? And
 " when he hath found it, he layeth it
 " on his shoulders, rejoicing: And
 " when he cometh home, he calleth
 " together

no " together his friends and neighbours, Galilee.
 at. 32. " saying to them, Rejoice with me, Luk. xv.
 iift. 3. " for I have found my sheep which
 " was lost. I say unto you, that like-7.
 " wise joy shall be in heaven over one
 " sinner that repenteth, more than over
 " ninety and nine just persons, which
 " need no repentance. Either what wo-8.
 " man having ten pieces of silver, if
 " she lose one piece, doth not light a
 " candle, and sweep the house, and
 " seek diligently till she find it? And 9.
 " when she hath found it, she calleth
 " her friends and her neighbours toge-
 " ther, saying, Rejoice with me, for
 " I have found the piece which I had
 " lost. Likewise I say unto you, There 10.
 " is joy in the presence of the Angels
 " of God, over one sinner that re-
 " peneth.
 " And he said, " A certain man had 11.
 " two sons, and the younger of them 12.
 " said to his father, Father, give me
 " the portion of goods that falleth to
 " me. And he divided to them his
 " living. And not many days after, 13.
 " the younger son gathered all together,
 " and took his journey into a far coun-
 " try, and there wasted his substance
 " with riotous living. And when he 14.
 " had spent all, there arose a mighty
 " famine in that land; and he began to
 " be in want. And he went and joyned 15.
 " himself to a citizen of that coun-
 " try; and he sent him into his
 " fields to feed swine. And he would 16.
 " fain

Galiice.
Luk. xv.

- “ fain have fill’d his belly with the husks that the swine did eat, and no man gave to him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my fathers have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose and came to his father. But when he was a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion; and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the Son said to him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be call’d thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet, And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat and be merry. For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Now his elder Son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant? And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted

Anno
Ætat. 32
Minist. 3

no "fatted calf, because he hath re- Luk. xv.
 32. "ceived him safe and sound. And 28.
 nist. 3. "he was angry, and would not go
 "in: therefore came his father out,
 "and intreated him. And he answer- 29
 "ing, said to his father, Lo these
 "many years do I serve thee, nei-
 "ther transgressed I at any time
 "thy commandment, and yet thou
 "never gavest me a kid, that I might
 "make merry with my friends: But 30.
 "as soon as this thy son was come,
 "which hath devoured thy living
 "with harlots, thou hast killed for
 "him the fatted calf. And he said 31.
 "unto him, Son, thou art ever with
 "me, and all that I have is thine.
 "It was meet that we should make 32.
 "merry, and be glad: for this thy
 "brother was dead, and is alive a-
 "gain; and was lost, and is found.

S E C T. CIV.

*A Similitude concerning the true
 use of Riches. The Parable of
 the wealthy Glutton and the
 Beggar Lazarus, relating to it.*

AND [Jesus] said also unto his 1. Luk. xvi.
 "disciples, "There was a cer-
 "tain rich man which had a Steward;
 "and the same was accused to him
 "that he had wasted his Goods.
 "And he called him, and said to 2.
 O "him,

Luk. xvi.

- " him, How is it that I hear this of Anno
 " thee? give an account of thy Etat. 32
 " Stewardship; for thou mayest be Minist. 3
 3. " no longer Steward. Then the
 " Steward said withip himself, What
 " shall I do? for my Lord taketh a-
 " way from me the Stewardship, I
 " cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.
 4. " I am resolved what to do, that
 " when I am put out of the Steward-
 " ship, they may receive me into
 5. " their houses. So he called every
 " one of his Lord's debtors to him,
 " and said unto the first, How much
 6. " owest thou to my Lord? And he
 " said, ^a hundred measures of oil.
 " And he said unto him, Take thy
 " bill, and sit down quickly and
 7. " write fifty. Then said he to ano-
 " ther, And how much owest thou?
 " And he said, A hundred measures
 " of wheat. And he said unto him,
 " Take thy bill, and write fourscore.
 8. " And the Lord commended the un-
 " just Steward, because he had done
 " wisely: for the children of this
 " world are in their generation wi-
 9. " ser than the children of light. And
 " I say unto you, make to your selves
 " friends of the Mammon of un-
 " righteousness, that when ye fail,
 " they may receive you into ever-
 " lasting habitations.
 10. " He that is faithful in that which
 " is least, is faithful also in much:
 " and he that is unjust in the least,
 " is

- 10
st. 32.
ist. 3.
- “ is unjust also in much: If there- 11. Luk. xvi.
“ fore ye have not been faithful in
“ the unrighteous Mammon, who
“ will commit to your trust the true
“ riches? And if ye have not been 12.
“ faithful in that which is another
“ mans, who shall give you that
“ which is your own? No servant 13.
“ can serve two masters: for either
“ he will hate the one, and love the
“ other; or else he will hold to the
“ one, and despise the other. Ye
“ cannot serve God and Mammon.
And the Pharisees also who were 14.
covetous, heard all these things:
and they derided him. And he said 15.
unto them, “ Ye are they which ju-
“ stifie your selves before men; But
“ God knoweth your hearts: for
“ that which is highly esteemed a-
“ mongst men, is abomination in the
“ sight of God: The Law and the 16.
“ Prophets were until John: since
“ that time the kingdom of God is
“ preached, and every man presseth
“ into it. And it is easier for hea- 17.
“ ven and earth to pass, than one
“ tittle of the law to fail.
“ Whosoever putteth away his 18.
“ wife, and marieth another, com-
“ mitteth adultery: whosoever mar-
“ rieth her that is put away from
“ her husband, committeth adul-
“ tery.
“ There was a certain rich man, 19.
“ which was clothed in purple and
“ fine

Galilee.

Luk. xvi. 20.

20. " fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day. And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores: And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.
 21. " And it came to pass that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried. And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.
 22. " And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulph fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldst send him to my father's house. For I have five brethren; that he may testify

Anno

Ætat. 32.

Minist. 3.

10 "to them, lest they also come into Luk. xvi.
 11. 32. "this place of torment. Abraham.
 12. 31. "Faith unto him, They have Mo- 29.
 "ses and the Prophets; let them
 "hear them, And he said, nay, fa- 30.
 "ther Abraham: but if one went
 "to them from the dead, they will
 "repent. And he said unto him, 31.
 "If they hear not Moses and the
 "Prophets, neither will they be per-
 "suaded, though one rose from the
 "dead.

S E C T. CV.

*Jesus speaks to his disciples con-
 cerning Offences, pardoning of
 Injuries, the increase of Faith,
 and unprofitable Servants,*

1. Luk. xvii.
 T^Hen said [Jesus] unto the dis-
 ciples, "It is impossible but
 "that offences will come: But wo
 "unto him through whom they
 "come. It were better for him that 2:
 "a millstone were hanged about his
 "neck, and he cast into the sea, than
 "that he should offend one of these
 "little ones.
 "Take heed to your selves: if 3:
 "thy brother trespass against thee,
 "rebuke him; and if he repent for-
 "give him. And if he trespass a- 4:
 "gainst thee seven times in a day,
 "and seven times in a day turn again

Luk. xvii.

" to thee, saying, I repent; thou
 " shalt forgive him.

Anno
 Ætaz. 32.
 Minist. 3.

5. And the Apostles said unto the
 6. Lord, *increase our faith.* And the
 Lord said, " If ye had faith as a
 " grain of mustard seed, ye might
 " say unto this sycamine tree, Be
 " thou plucked up by the root, and
 " be thou planted in the sea; and it
 " should obey you.
 7. " But which of you having a ser-
 " vant plowing, or feeding cattle,
 " will say unto him by and by when
 " he is come from the field, Go and
 8. " sit down to meat? And will not
 " rather say unto him, Make ready
 " wherewith I may sup, and gird
 " thy self, and serve me, till I have
 " eaten and drunken; and afterward
 9. " thou shalt eat and drink? Doth
 " he thank that servant because he
 " did the things that were com-
 10. " manded him? I trow not. So
 " likewise ye, when ye shall have
 " done all those things which are
 " commanded you, say, we are un-
 " profitable servants: we have
 " done that which was our duty to
 " do.

SECT.

DO
at. 32.
list. 3.

Luk. xvii.

SECT. CVI.

Ten Lepers cleansed, one of whom returns and gives thanks to Jesus.

AND it came to pass as [Jesus] ^{11.} went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entred into a certain ^{12.} village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: And ^{13.} they lifted up their voices, and said, *Jesus Master, have mercy on us.* And ^{14.} when he saw them, he said unto them, *Go shew your selves to the priests.* And it came to pass that as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them when ^{15.} he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, And fell down on his face at his feet, ^{16.} giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering, said, ^{17.} *Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? There are not found that* ^{18.} *returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.* And he said unto him, *Arise,* ^{19.} *go thy ways, thy faith has made thee whole.*

Luk. xvii.

S E C T. CVII.

Anno 7.
Ætat 9
Minist. 8

Jesus's answer to the Pharisees who asked when the Kingdom of God should come, and discourse with his Disciples concerning it. A

20. **A**ND when he was demanded of
the Pharisees when the kingdom
of God should come; he answered them
and said, "The kingdom of God com-
21. "eth not with observation. Neither
"shall they say, Lo here, or, lo there;
"for behold, the kingdom of God is
22. "within you. And he said unto the
disciples, "The days will come when
"ye shall desire to see one of the days
"of the son of man, and ye shall not
23. "see it. And they shall say to you,
"See here, or see there: go not after
24. "them, nor follow them. For as the
"lightning that lightneth out of the one
"part under heaven, shineth to the o-
"ther part under heaven: so shall also
25. "the son of man be in his day. But
"first must he suffer many things, and
26. "be rejected of this generation. And
"as it was in the days of Noe, so shall
"it be also in the days of the son of
27. "man. They did eat, they drank, they
"married wives, they were given in
"marriage, until the day that Noe en-
"tered into the ark: and the flood came
28. "and destroyed them all. Likewise
"also

also as it was in the days of Lot, Luk. xvii.

they did eat, they drank, they bought,

they sold, they planted, they build-

ed. But the same day that Lot went 29.

out of Sodom, it rained fire and brim-

stone from heaven, and destroyed

them all: even thus shall it be in the 30.

day when the son of man is revealed.

In that day, he which shall be upon 31.

the house top, and his stuff in the

house, let him not come down to

take it away; and he that is in the

field, let him likewise not return

back. Remember Lot's wife. Who 32.

soever shall seek to save his life, shall 33.

lose it: and whosoever shall lose his

life, shall preserve it. I tell you in 34.

that night there shall be two men in

one bed, the one shall be taken, and

the other shall be left. Two women 35.

shall be grinding together, the one

shall be taken, and the other left.

Two men shall be in the field, 36.

the one shall be taken, and the other

left. And they answered and said 37.

unto him, *Where, Lord?* and he said

unto them, *Wheresoever the body is,*

thither will the eagles be gathered to-

gether.

SECT.

Luk. xviii.

S E C T. CVIII.

Anno
Rept. 1
Minist.

*Parables in which Jesus shews the
necessity of continuing instant in
Prayer, and being humbly minded.*

- Luk. xviii. 1. **A**ND [Jesus] spake a parable to
 2. them to this end, that men ought
 3. always to pray, and not to faist; say-
 4. ing, "There was in a city a judge,
 5. "which feared not God, neither re-
 6. "garded man. And there was a wi-
 7. "dow in that city, and she came to
 8. "him, saying, Avenge me of mine
 9. "adversary. And he would not for a
 10. "while; but afterward he said with-
 11. "in himself, Though I fear not God,
 12. "nor regard man; Yet because this
 13. "widow troubleth me, I will avenge
 14. "her, lest by her continual coming she
 15. "weary me. And the Lord said, Hear
 16. "what the unjust judge saith. And
 17. "shall not God avenge his own elect,
 18. "which cry day and night unto him,
 19. "though he bear long with them; I
 20. "tell you that he will avenge them
 21. "speedily. Nevertheless, when the
 22. "son of man cometh, shall he find
 23. "faith on the earth?
 24. And he spake this parable to certain
 25. which trusted in themselves, that they
 26. were righteous, and despised others;
 27. 10. "Two men went up into the Temple
 28. "to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the
 29. "other

5 " other a Publican. The Pharisee stood 11. Luk. xviii.
 22. " and prayed thus with himself: God I
 ft. 3. " thank thee, that I am not as other
 " men are, extortioners, unjust, adul-
 " terers, or even as this Publican. I 12.
 " fast twice in the week, I give tithes
 " of all I possess. And the Publican 13.
 " standing afar off, would not lift up
 " so much as his eyes to heaven, but
 " smote on his breast, saying, God be
 " merciful to me a sinner. I tell you 14.
 " this man went down to his house
 " justified rather than the other: for
 " every one that exalteth himself, shall
 " be abased; and he that humbleth him-
 " self shall be exalted.

S E C T. CIX.

*Jesus goes to Jerusalem against the Temple.
 feast of Dedication, discourses in
 Solomon's Porch concerning the
 Jew's infidelity, and himself; they
 endeavour to stone him.*

A N D it was at Jerusalem the feast 22. Joh. x.
 of dedication, and it was win-
 ter. And Jesus walked in the temple in 23.
 Solomon's porch. Then came the Jews 24.
 round about him, and said unto him,
How long dost thou make us to doubt?
If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.
 Jesus answered them, " I told you, and 25.
 " ye believed not; the works that I do
 " in

Temple.
Joh. x.

26. " in my Father's name, they bear wit- Anno
ness of me. But ye believe not, be- 3
cause ye are not of my sheep, as I 9
said unto you. My sheep hear my 1
voice, and I know them, and they
27. " follow me, And I give unto them
28. " eternal life, and they shall never pe-
rish, neither shall any pluck them
29. " out of my hand. My father which
gave them me, is greater than all;
and none is able to pluck them out
30. " of my father's hand. I and my fa-
ther are one. Then the Jews took
31. " up stones again to stone him. Jesus
32. " answered them, Many good works
have I shewed you from my father;
for which of those works do ye stone
33. " me? The Jews answered him, say-
ing, *For a good work we stone thee not,*
but for blasphemy, and because that thou,
34. *being a man, makest thy self God.* Je-
sus answered them, " Is it not written
" in your Law, I said, ye are Gods?
35. " If he called them Gods, unto whom
the word of God came, and the
36. " Scripture cannot be broken: Say ye
of him whom the father hath sancti-
fied, and sent into the world, Thou
" blasphemest; because I said I am the
37. " son of God? If I do not the works
38. " of my father, believe me not. But if
I do, though ye believe not me, be-
lieve the works, that ye may know
and believe, that the father is in me,
39. " and I in him. Therefore they sought
again

again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand. Temple.
 fl. 4. 33. of their hand. Joh. x.

The End of the Third Year of Christ's Ministry.

S E C T. CX.

*Jesus goes into Judea beyond Jordan.
 He shews the unlawfulness of divorce for every cause.*

AND it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, Coast of Judea beyond Jordan.
 r. x. 1. * he departed from Galilee, and came 1. Mat. xix.
 x. 40. into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan,
 * into the place where John at first bapti- 40. Joh. x.
 r. x. 1. zed; and there he abode *, * And great 2 Mat. xix.
 x. 41. multitudes followed him *, and as he 1 Mar. x.
 went, he taught them again, * and he heal- 2. Mat. xix.
 ed them there * and [they] said, *John did* 41. Joh. x.
no miracle: but all things that John spake
of this man were true. And many be- 42.
 r. x. 2, lieved on him there. * * The Pharisees 3. Mat. xix.
 7, 8, also came unto him, tempting him, and
 saying unto him, *Is it lawful for a man*
to put away his wife for every cause?
 And he answered and said unto them, 4.
 "Have ye not read, that he which made
 "them at the beginning, made them
 "male and female? And said, for this 5.
 "cause shall a man leave father and
 "mother, and cleave to his wife: and
 "they twain shall be one flesh. Where- 6.
 "fore they are no more twain, but one
 "flesh.

- Coast of Judea¹¹ flesh. What therefore God hath joyn- Anno
beyond Jordan¹¹ ed together, let not man put asunder. *Eccl. 3*
Mat. xix. * And he answered and said unto them, *Minist. 4*
Mar. x. 3. 7. *What did Moses command you?* * They
Mat. xix. say unto him, *Why did^d Moses then^d Mar. x.*
command to give a writing of divorce-
8. *ment, and to put her away?* He saith
unto them, *"Moses, * because of the^d Mar. x.*
"hardness of your hearts, suffered you
"to put away your wives: but from
9. *"the beginning it was not so. And I*
"say unto you, Whosoever shall put
"away his wife, except it be for for-
"nication, and shall marry another,
"committeth adultery: and whoso
"marrieth her which is put away, doth
"commit adultery.
Mar. x. 10. * And in the house his disciples ask-
11. ed him again of the same matter. And
he saith unto them, *"Whosoever shall*
"put away his wife, and marry ano-
"ther, committeth adultery against her.
12. *"And if a woman shall put away her*
husband, and be married to another,
Mat. xix. 10. *"she committeth adultery. * His dis-*
ciples say unto him, *If the case of the*
man be so with his wife, it is not good to
11. *marry.* But he said unto them, *"All*
"men cannot receive this saying, save
"they to whom it is given. For there
"are some Eunuchs, which were so
"born from their mother's womb, and
"there are some Eunuchs, which were
"made Eunuchs of men: and there be
"Eunuchs which have made themselves
"Eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's
"sake.

o. " take. He that is able to receive it, Coast of Judea
 t. 33. " let him receive it. beyond Jordan.
 ft. 4. Mat. xix.

S E C T. CXI.

*Little Children are brought to Jesus,
 on whom he lays his Hand.*

r. x. 12. **T**hen were there brought to him lit- 13. Mat. xix.
 . xviii. tle children, that he should put
 his hands on them, and pray, * and his 13. Mar. x.
 disciples rebuked those that brought
 st. xix. them. But when Jesus saw it he was 14.
 . xviii. much displeased, and said to them,
 " suffer the little children to come to
 " me, and forbid them not: for of such
 r. x. 15. " is the kingdom of God. * Verily 15. Luk. xviii.
 " I say unto you, Whosoever shall not
 " receive the kingdom of God as a
 " little child, shall in no wise enter
 " therein *. And he took them up 16. Mar. x.
 st. xix. in his arms; * put his hands upon 15. Mat. xix.
 them, and blessed them *, and departed
 thence.

S E C T. CXII.

*Jesus answers the question of the rich
 young Man, who inquired the way
 to eternal Life.*

In the way.

lat. xix. **A**ND when [Jesus] was gone forth 17. Mar. x.
 into the way, * there came one 18. Luk. xviii.
 running, and kneeling to him * a certain
 r. x. 17. ruler, and asked him, saying, * Good
 master

- In the way. *master* * *what good thing shall I do that* Anno 332
 Mat. xix. 16. *I may* * *inherit eternal life?* * And Je- ^{Mat. 33}
 Mar. x. 17. *sus said unto him, Why callest thou me* ^{Misist. 4}
 18. *good? there is none good but one, that* ^{Mat. xii}
 Mat. xix. 17. *is God,* * *but if thou wilt enter into life,* ^{Luk. xviii}
 18. *keep the commandments.* ^{19.} ^{Mar. x. 19}
 to him, *Which?* ^{Luk. xviii} Jesus said, *Thou shalt*
do no murther, Thou shalt not commit
adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou
 {Mar. x. 19. *shalt not bear false witness.* * *Defraud*
 {Mat. xix. 19. *not,* * *Honour thy father and thy mo-*
ther; and Thou shalt love thy neighbour
as thy self. The young man saith unto
 Mar. x. 20. *him, * Master,* ^{Mat. xix} *all these things have I*
 Mat. xix. 20. *observed from my youth, * What lack I* ^{20, 21}
 Luk. xviii. 22. *yet?* * Now when Jesus heard these ^{Luk. xviii}
 Mar. x. 21. *things, * beholding him, loved him,* ^{21, 22}
 and said unto him, *One thing thou lack-*
 Mat. xix. 21. *est; * If thou wilt be perfect, * go thy*
 Mar. x. 21. *way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give*
to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure
in heaven; and come, take up the cross
 Mat. xix. 22. *and follow me.* * * But when the young ^{Mar. x. 22}
 man heard that saying, he went away ^{Luk. xviii}
 sorrowful: for he had great possessions. ²³
 Luk. xviii. 24. * And when Jesus saw that he was very
 Mar. x. 23. *sorrowful, * [He] looked round about,* ^{Mat. xix}
and saith unto his disciples, How hard- ²³
 24. *ly shall they that have riches enter into* ^{Luk. xviii}
the kingdom of God! And the disciples ²⁴
 were astonished at his words. But Je-
 sus answereth again, and saith unto
 them, "Children, how hard is it for
 them that trust in riches, to enter
 Mat. xix. 24. *into the kingdom of God; * And* ^{Mar. x. 25}
again I say unto you, It is easier for a ^{Luk. xviii}
camel ²⁵

- no " camel to go through the eye of a ^{In the way.} ^{25.}
- xt. 33. " needle, than for a rich man to enter ^{Mat. xix.}
- ist. 4. " into the kingdom of God. * When ^{25.}
- lk. xviii. his disciples heard it, they were ex-
27. ceedingly amazed, * Astonished out of ^{26.} ^{Mar. x.}
- t. xix. measure, saying amongst themselves,
26. *Who then can be saved? And Jesus*
- looking upon them, saith, With men it*
- is impossible, but not with God: for*
- lar. x. *with God all things are possible.* * ^{27.} ^{Mat. xix.}
29. answered Peter, and said unto him, Be-
- k. xviii. hold, we have forsaken all, and followed
29. thee; What shall we have therefore?
- And Jesus said unto them, " Verily I ^{28.}
- " say unto you, that ye which follow-
- " ed me in the regeneration, when the
- " son of man shall sit in the throne of
- " his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve
- " thrones, judging the twelve tribes of
- lar. xix. " Israel. * ^{29.} ^{Mar. x.}
- " There is no man that hath left house,
- k. xviii. " or brethren, or sisters, or father, or
30. " mother, or wife, or children, or lands
- " for my sake and the gospels, but he ^{30.}
- " shall receive an hundred fold now in
- " this time, and houses, and brethren,
- " and sisters, and mothers, and children,
- " and lands, with persecutions; and in
- lar. x. 31. " the world to come eternal life. * ^{30.} ^{Mat. xix.}
- " many that are first shall be last; and
- " the last shall be first. For the king- ^{1.} ^{Mat. xx.}
- " dom of heaven is like unto a man
- " that is an householder, which went
- " out early in the morning to hire la-
- " bourers into his vineyard. And when ^{2.}
- " he had agreed with the labourers for a
- P " penny

In the way.
Mat. xx.

3. " penny a day, he sent them into his
vineyard. And he went out about
4. " the third hour; and saw others stand-
ing idle in the market place, And said
unto them, Go ye also into the vine-
yard, and whatsoever is right I will
give you. And they went their way.
5. " Again he went out about the sixth and
6. " ninth hour, and did likewise. And
about the eleventh hour he went out,
and found others standing idle, and
saith unto them, Why stand ye here
7. " all the day idle? They say unto
him, Because no man hath hired us.
He saith unto them, Go ye also in-
to the vineyard, and whatsoever is
8. " right, that shall ye receive. So
when even was come, the Lord of
the vineyard saith unto his steward,
Call the labourers, and give them
their hire, beginning from the last
9. " unto the first. And when they came
that were hired about the eleventh
hour, they received every man a pen-
ny. But when the first came, they
10. " supposed that they should have re-
ceived more, and they likewise re-
ceived every man a penny. And when
11. " they had received it, they murmured
against the good man of the house,
saying, These last have wrought but
12. " one hour, and thou hast made them
equal unto us, which have born the
burden and heat of the day. But he
13. " answered one of them, and said,
Friend, I do thee no wrong; didst
" nor

Anno
Ætat. 3
Minist.

no " not thou agree with me for a penny? In the way.
 ar. 33. " Take that thine is, and go thy way: 14. Mat. xx.
 aist. 4. " I will give unto this last, even as un-
 " to thee. Is it not lawful for me to 15.
 " do what I will with mine own? Is
 " thine eye evil, because I am good?
 " So the last shall be first, and the first 16.
 " last: for many be called, but few
 " chosen.

SECT. CXIII.

The Resurrection of Lazarus.

NOW a certain man was sick, na- 1.
 med Lazarus of Bethany, the
 town of Mary and her sister Martha.
 (It was that Mary which anointed the 2.
 Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet
 with her hair, whose brother Lazarus
 was sick.) Therefore his sister sent un- 3.
 to him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom
 thou lovest, is sick. When Jesus heard 4.
 that, he said, This sickness is not unto
 death, but for the glory of God, that the
 son of God might be glorified thereby.
 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, 5.
 and Lazarus. When he had heard there- 6.
 fore that he was sick, he abode two
 days still in the same place where he
 was. Then after that saith he to his 7.
 disciples, Let us go into Judea again.
 His disciples say unto him, Master, the 8.
 Jews of late sought to stone thee, and
 goest thou thither again? Jesus answer- 9.

Joh. xi.

In the way.
Joh. xi.

ed; *Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.* These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, *Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.* Then said his disciples, *Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.* Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly, *Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there (to the intent ye may believe) nevertheless, let us go unto him.* Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow disciples, *Let us also go, that we may dye with him.* Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already. (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off.) And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their Brother. Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house. Then said Martha unto Jesus, *Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. But I know, that even now whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.* Jesus saith unto her, *Thy brother shall rise again.* Martha saith unto him, *I know*

Bethany.

Anno
Ætat. 33
Minist. 4.

10 know that he shall rise again in the re-^{Bethany.}
 11 33. surrection at the last day. Jesus said un-^{25. Joh. xi.}
 12 4. to her, I am the resurrection, and the
 life: he that believeth in me, though he
 were dead, yet shall he live. And who-^{26.}
 soever liveth, and believeth in me, shall
 never die, *Believest thou this?* She^{27.}
 saith unto him, *Yea, Lord: I believe*
that thou art the Christ the son of God,
which should come into the world. And^{28.}
 when she had so said, she went her way,
 and called Mary her sister secretly, say-
 ing, *The Master is come, and calleth for*
thee. As soon as she heard that, she^{29.}
 arose quickly, and came unto him.
 Now Jesus was not yet come into the^{30.}
 town, but was in that place where Mar-
 tha met him. The Jews then which^{31.}
 were with her in the house, and com-
 forted her, when they saw Mary that she
 rose up hastily, and went out, follow-
 ed her, saying, she goeth to the grave,
 to weep there. Then when Mary was^{32.}
 come where Jesus was, and saw him,
 she fell down at his feet, saying unto
 him, *Lord, if thou hadst been here, my*
brother had not died. When Jesus there-^{33.}
 fore saw her weeping, and the Jews al-
 so weeping which came with her, he
 groaned in the Spirit, and was troubled,
 And said, *Where have ye laid him?*^{34.}
 They say unto him, *Lord, come and*
see. Jesus wept. Then said the Jews,^{35.}
 Behold, how he loved him. And some^{36.}
 of them said, *Could not this man, which*^{37.}
opened the eyes of the blind, have caused

- Bethany. *that even this man should not have died?* Anno
 Joh. xi. 38. Jesus therefore again groaning in him- *Act. 33.*
 self, cometh to the grave. It was a *Minist. 4.*
 39. cave, and a stone lay upon it. Jesus
 said, *Take ye away the stone.* Martha,
 the sister of him that was dead, saith
 unto him, *Lord, by this time he stink-*
eth: for he hath been dead four days.
 40. Jesus saith unto her, *Said I not unto thee,*
that if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest
 41. *see the glory of God?* Then they took a-
 way the stone from the place where the
 dead was laid. And Jesus lift up his eyes,
 and said, *Father, I thank thee that thou*
 42. *hast heard me. And I knew that thou hear-*
est me always: but because of the people
which stand by, I said it, that they may be-
 43. *lieve that thou hast sent me.* And when
 he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud
 Miracle. 44. voice, *Lazarus, come forth.* And he
 that was dead came forth, bound hand
 and foot with grave clothes: and his
 face was bound about with a napkin.
 Jesus saith unto them, *Loose him, and*
let him go.
 45. Then many of the Jews which came
 to Mary, and had seen the things which
 46. Jesus did, believed on him. But some
 of them went their ways to the Phari-
 sees, and told them what things Jesus
 47. had done. Then gathered the chief
 Priests and the Pharisees a council, and
 said, *What do we? for this man doth*
 48. *many miracles. If we let him thus alone,*
all men will believe on him; and the
Romans shall come and take away both
our

Ann^o our place and nation. And one of Bethany.
 Eccl. 33. them named Caiaphas, being the high 49. Joh. xi.
 Minist. 4. priest that same year, said unto them,
Ye know nothing at all, Nor consider that 50.
it is expedient for us, that one man
should die for the people, and that the
whole nation perish not. And this spake 51.
 he not of himself: but being high priest
 that year, he prophesied that Jesus
 should die for the nation; And not for 52.
 that nation only, but that also he should
 gather together in one, the children of
 God that were scattered abroad. Then 53.
 from that day forth they took council
 together for to put him to death. Je- 54.
 sus therefore walked no more openly
 among the Jews; but went thence unto
 a country near to the wilderness, into
 a city called Ephraim, and there conti- Ephraim.
 nued with his disciples.

S E C T. CXIV.

*Jesus goes to Jerusalem, and foretels
 his death.*

* Mat. xx. 17. **A**ND they were in the way going The way to Je-
 up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went rusalem.
 before them, and they were amazed, and 32. Mar. x.
 as they followed, they were afraid.
 * Mar. x. 32. ^b And he took again * the twelve disci- 17. Mat. xx:
 Luk. xviii. ples apart in the way, * and began to 32. Mar. x.
 31. tell them what things should happen to
 * Mat. xx. him, ^c saying, "Behold, we go up to 33.
 19. "Jerusalem, * And all things that are 31. Luk. xviii,
 "written by the prophets concerning the

- The way to Jerusalem. " son of man shall be accomplished. Anno
 " * ^d And the son of man shall be be- ^{Act. 33.}
 Mat. xx. 18. " trayed unto the chief priests, and un- ^{Miput. 4.}
 " to the Scribes, and they shall con- ^{d Mar. x. 33.}
 19. " demn him to death, And shall deliver ^{Luk. xviii.}
 Mar. x. 34. " him to the Gentiles. * And they shall ^{32, 33.}
 " mock him, And shall scourge him, ^{Mar. x. 34.}
 " And shall spit upon him, And shall
 Mat. xx. 19. " * crucifie him, And the third day he
 Luk. xviii. 34. " shall rise again, * and they understood
 " none of these things: and this saying
 " was hid from them, neither knew
 " they the things which were spoken.

S E C T. CXV,

*The Sons of Zebedee desire of Jesus
 that one of them might sit at his
 right, the other at his left hand
 in his kingdom. Jesus reproves
 them for their ambition.*

- Mar. xx. 20. **T**HEN came to [Jesus] the mother ^{Mar. x. 35.}
 of Zebedee's children, with her
 Mar. x. 35. sons * James and John * worshipping him,
 Mat. xx. 20. and ^r desiring a certain thing of him, ^{Mar. x.}
 21. * and he said unto her, *What wilt thou?* ^{35, 36.}
 Mat. xx. 21. * ^s She saith unto him, *Grant that these* ^{Mar. x.}
my two sons may sit, the one on thy ^{37, 33, 37.}
right hand, and the other on thy left in
 22. *thy kingdom.* But Jesus answered and
 said, *Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye*
able to drink of the cup that I shall drink
of, and to be baptized with the baptism
that I am baptized with? They say un-

to him, *We are able.* * ⁴ And Jesus ^{39.} The way to
said unto them, *Ye shall indeed drink of Jerusalem.*
^{33.} *the cup that I drink of; and with the* ^{39.} Mar. x.
^{4.} *baptism that I am baptized withall*
^{xx.} *shall ye be baptized: But to sit on my*
right hand, and on my left is not mine
to give; but it shall be given to them for
whom it is prepared * *of my father.* ^{23.} Mar. xx.
^{ar. x.} ¹ And when the ten heard it, they were ^{24.}
^{42.} moved with indignation against the
two brethren * James and John. * But
Jesus called them to him; and said, *Ye* { ^{41.} Mar. x,
^{25.} Mar. xx,
know that the princes of the Gentiles
exercise dominion over them, and they
that are great exercise authority upon
^{xx.} *them.* * *But so shall it not be among you:* ^{43.} Mar. x.
^{27.} ^{28.} *but whosoever will be great among you,*
shall be your minister; And whosoever ^{44.}
of you will be the chiefest, shall be ser-
vant of all. For even the son of man ^{45.}
came not to be ministered unto, but to mi-
nister, and to give his life a ransom for
many.

S E C T. CXVI.

Jesus going from Jericho; cureth blind Jericho.
Bartimeus,

^{xx.} * **A**ND they came to Jericho: and ^{46.} Mar. x.
^{31.} ^{32.} as he went out of Jericho with
^{xxviii.} his disciples, and a great number of
people, blind Bartimeus, the son of
Timeus, sat by the high way side, beg-
ging, And hearing the multitude pass by, ^{36.} Luk. xviii.
Mar. x, he asked what it meant? * And they ^{37.}
^{1.} ^{48.} told

- Jericho. told him, that Jesus of Nazareth pas- Anno
 Mar. x. 38. sath by. And he cried, saying, *Jesus, Erat. 33.*
thou son of David, have mercy on me. Minist. 4.
 39. And they which went before, rebuked
 him, that he should hold his peace;
 but he cried so much the more, *Thou*
 Mar. x. 49. *son of David, have mercy on me.* * And * Luk. xviii.
 Jesus stood still, and commanded him 40.
 to be called: and they call the blind
 man, saying, unto him, *Be of good com-*
 50. *fort, rise, he calleth thee.* And he cast-
 ing away his garment, rose, and came
 51. to Jesus. ^d And Jesus answered and said ^d Mat. xx.
 unto him, *What wilt thou that I should* 32, 33.
do unto thee? The blind man said un- Luk. xviii.
 to him, *Lord that I might receive my* 40, 41.
 Mat. x. 34. *sight.* * So Jesus had compassion on
 Luk. xviii. 42. *[him]* and touched *[his]* eyes: * * And * Mar. x. 52.
 Jesus said unto him, *Receive thy sight:*
 Miracle. *thy faith hath saved thee.* * * And * Mat. xx.
 Mar. x. 52. immediately he received his sight, and 34.
 Luk. xviii. 43. followed Jesus in the way, * Glorifying Luk. xviii.
 God: and all the people when they 43.
 saw it, gave praise to God.

MO

tit. 33.
mist. 4.

Jericho.

S E C T. CXVII.

Jesus going through Jericho, Zachæus desirous to see him, climbs up a tree: Jesus calls him and goes to his house; at which the Jews murmur, because he was a Publican. The Parable of the King that went out of his Dominions to be crowned in another Country.

AND Jesus entred and passed thro' 1. Luk. xix.
Jericho. And behold there was 2.
a man named Zachæus, which was the
chief among the Publicans, and he was
rich. And he sought to see Jesus ~~who~~ 3.
he was, and could not for the press, be-
cause he was little of stature. And he 4.
ran before and climbed up into a syco-
more tree, to see him; for he was to
pass that way. And when Jesus came 5.
to the place, he looked up and saw
him, and said unto him, *Zachæus, make
haste, and come down; for to day, I must
abide at thy house.* And he made haste, 6.
and came down, and received him joy-
fully. And when they saw it, they all 7.
murmured, saying, that he was gone to
be guest with a man that is a sinner. And 8.
Zachæus stood and said unto the Lord,
*Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give
to the poor; and if I have taken any
thing from any man by false accusation,
I restore him fourfold.* And Jesus said 9.

unto

Jericho.
Luk. xix.

unto him, *This day is salvation come to this house; for as much as he also is the son of Abraham. For the son of man is come to seek, and to save that which was lost.*

Anno
Aet. 33.
Minist. 4.

11. And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear. He said therefore, "A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them,
12. "Occupy till I come. But his Citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, we will not have this man to reign over us. And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom,
13. "then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him,
14. "Well done thou good servant; because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten Cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise
15. "to him, Be thou also over five Cities.
16. "And another came, saying, Lord, Behold,

10 " hold, here is thy pound which I have Jericho.
 11. 33. " kept laid up in a napkin: For I fear- 21. Luk. xix.
 12. 4 " ed thee, because thou art an austere
 " man: thou takest up that thou layest
 " not down, and reapest that thou didst
 " not sow. And he saith unto him, 22
 " Out of thine own mouth will I judge
 " thee, thou wicked servant. Thou
 " knewest that I was an austere man,
 " taking up that I laid not down, and
 " reaping that I did not sow: Where- 23
 " fore then gavest not thou my money
 " into the bank, that at my coming I
 " might have required mine own with
 " usury? And he said unto them that 24
 " stood by, Take from him the pound,
 " and give it to him that hath ten
 " pounds. (And they said unto him, 25
 " Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I, 26
 " say unto you, That unto every one
 " which hath, shall be given: and from
 " him that hath not, even that he hath
 " shall be taken away from him. But 27
 " those mine enemies which would not
 " that I should reign over them, bring
 " hither, and slay them before me.

SECT. CXVIII.

*Jesus goes to Bethany, where Mary
 anoints his feet.*

AND the Jew's passover was nigh ss. Joh. xi.
 at hand: and many went out of
 the country up to Jerusalem before the
 passover,

Jericho.
Joh. xi.

passover, to purifie themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, *What think ye that he will not come to the feast?* Now both the chief Priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

Anno
Ætæ. 3:
Minist. 4

Joh. xii.
Bethany.

1. Then Jesus six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him. Then took Mary a pound of Ointment, of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the Ointment. Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him, *Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?* This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. 7. Then said Jesus, *Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.* 8. *For the poor always ye have with you;* 9. *but me ye have not always.* Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

dead. But the chief Priests consulted ^{Bethany.}
 t. 33. that they might put Lazarus also to ^{10. Joh. xii.}
 st. 4. death. Because that by reason of him ^{11.}
 many of the Jews went away, and be-
 lieved on Jesus.

S E C T. CXIX.

*Jesus goes to Jerusalem riding on an
 Ass, and attended with Acclama-
 tions of the People, at which the
 Pharisees are enraged. He drives
 the Traders out of the Temple, Cures
 the Sick. The Boys follow him
 with Acclamations, to the great
 vexation of the Sanhedrim.*

AND when Jesus had thus spoken. ^{28. Luk. xix.}
 * On the next day, * he went be- ^{12. Joh. xii.}
 it. xxi. fore ascending to Jerusalem. * And ^{28. Luk. xix.}
 . xix. when they came nigh to Jerusalem, un- ^{1. Mar. xi.}
 30. to Bethphage and Bethany, at the ^{Bethphage.}
 Mount of Olives, [*Jesus*] sendeth forth
 two of his disciples; And saith unto ^{2. Mar. xi.}
 them, "Go your way into the village
 "over against you; and as soon as ye
 "be entred into it * ye shall find an ^{2. Mat. xxi.}
 "ass tied, and a colt with her, * where- ^{2. Mar. xi.}
 "on never man sat: loose him, and ^{30. Luk. xix.}
 at. xxi. "bring him * hither. * And if any man ^{31.}
 . xi. 3. "ask you why do ye loose him? thus
 "shall ye say unto him, Because the ^{3. Mar. xi.}
 "Lord hath need of him. * And ^{4. Mat. xxi.}
 "straightway he will send him hither.
 * All this was done that it might be
 fulfilled

- Bethphage. filled which was spoken by the prophet Anno
[Zachariah ix. 9.] saying, Tell ye the Ait. 33
daughter of Sion, Behold thy King cometh unto thee, meek and sitting upon Minist. 4
an ass, and a colt, the foal of an ass.
- Mar. xi. 4. *^c And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met: and they^c Mar. xx
Luk. xix. 33. loose him. *^d And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto^{6.} Luk. xix. 3
Mar. xi. 6. them, Why loose ye the colt? * And they said unto them even as Jesus had^d Mar. xi. 1
Luk. xix. 34. } commanded: * The Lord hath need of
Mar. xi. 6. } him. * And they let them go. And
Luk. xix. 35. } they brought the colt to Jesus: *^e And^e Mat. xx
they cast their garments upon the colt,^{7.} Mar. xi. 7
and they set Jesus thereon.
- Joh. xii. 12. * Much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of
13. Palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the
king of Israel that cometh in the name
14. of the Lord. And Jesus when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as
15. it is written, Fear not, daughter of Sion. Behold thy king cometh, sitting upon an
16. asses colt. These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.
17. The People therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his Grave, and raised him from the dead,
bare

bare record. For this cause the people
 33. also met him, for that they heard that
 4. he had done this Miracle. * And as he
 xi. 8. went * a very great multitude spread
 xix. their garments in the way; others cut
 down branches from the trees, and
 strewed them in the way. * And when
 he was come nigh, even now at the de-
 xxi. 9. scent of the mount of Olives, ^b the
 xi. 9. whole multitude of the disciples began
 to rejoice, and praise God with a loud
 voice for all the mighty works that they
 xi. 9. had seen, * ^c saying, *Hosanna to the son*
 xxi. 9. *of David: * Blessed be the king that*
cometh in the name of the Lord: peace
in heaven, and glory in the highest.
** Blessed be the kingdom of our father*
David that cometh in the name of the
 t. xxi. *Lord, ^d Hosanna in the highest.* * And
 some of the Pharisees from among the
 multitude, said unto him, *Master, re-*
buke thy disciples. And he answered
 and said unto them, *I tell you, that if*
these should hold their peace, the stones
would immediately cry out. * The Pha-
 risees therefore said among themselves,
Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing: be-
hold, the world is gone after him.
 * And when he was come near, he
 beheld the city, and wept over it, say-
 ing, "If thou hadst known, even thou,
 "at least in this thy day, the things
 "which belong unto thy peace! but now
 "they are hid from thine eyes. For the
 "days shall come upon thee, that thine
 "enemies shall cast a trench about thee,
 "and compass thee round, and keep thee

Near Jerusa-
lem. 44. " in on every side. And shall lay thee
" even with the ground, and thy children
" within thee; and they shall not leave
" in thee one stone upon another, be-
" cause thou knewest not the time of
" thy visitation.

Anno
Ætat. 3;
Minist. 4

Jerusalem. * And when he was come into Jeru-
Mat. xxi. 10. salem, all the city was moved, saying,

11. *Who is this?* And the multitude said,

This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth

Mar. xi. 13. *of Galilee.* * And they came to Jeru-

Temple.

salem: * and Jesus went into the tem- * Mat. x
ple, and began to cast out them that

fold and bought in the temple, and o- Luk. xi
verthrew the tables of the money chan- 45.

Mar. xi. 16. doves; And would not suffer that any
man should carry any vessel through the

17. temple. And he taught, b saying unto * Mat. x

them, *Is it not written, my house shall be* 13.
called of all nations the house of prayer? Luk. xi
but ye have made it a den of thieves. 46.

Mat. xxi. 14. * And the blind and the lame came
to him in the temple, and he healed

15. them. And when the chief Priests and

Scribes saw the wonderful things that
he did, and the children crying in the

temple, and saying, *Hosanna to the son*

16. *of David;* they were sore displeased,
and said unto him, *Hearst thou what*

these say? And Jesus saith unto them,

Yea, have ye never read, [Psal. viii. 3.]

out of the mouth of babes and sucklings
thou hast perfected praise?

Luk. xix. 47. * And he taught daily in the temple,
but the chief Priests and the Scribes,

and the chief of the people sought to ^{33.} destroy him. And could not find what ^{48.} they might do: for all the people were ^{Luk. xix.} very attentive to hear him.

S E C T. CXX.

The curiosity of some Greeks to see Jerusalem. Jesus. His Speech concerning his death, and the Incredibility of the Jews; which ended, he returns in the evening to Bethany.

AND there were certain Greeks ^{a. 20.} among them, that came up to wor- ^{Joh. xii.} ship at the feast. The same came there- ^{21.} fore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, ^{22.} Sir, we would see Jesus. Philip com- ^{23.} eth and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip told Jesus. And ^{24.} Jesus answered them, saying, "The hour is come, that the son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily I say ^{25.} unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life, ^{26.} shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal. If any man serve me, ^{27.} let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour. Now is my soul trou- ^{28.} bled;

Jerusalem.
Joh. xii.

- “bled; and what shall I say? Father
“save me from this hour: but for this
28. “cause came I unto this hour. Father
“glorifie thy name. Then came there
a voice from heaven, saying, *I have
both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.*
29. The people therefore that stood by,
and heard it, said, *That it thundred:*
others said, *An angel spake to him.*
30. Jesus answered, and said, “This voice
“came not because of me, but for
31. “your sakes: Now is the judgment of
“this world: now shall the prince of
32. “this world be cast out. And I, if I
“be lifted up from the earth, will draw
33. “all men to me. (This he said, fig-
nifying what death he should die.)
34. The people answered him, *We have
heard out of the Law, that Christ abid-
eth for ever: and how sayest thou, The
son of man must be lift up? who is this*
35. *son of man?* Then Jesus said unto them,
“Yet a little while is the light with
“you: walk while ye have the light,
“lest darkness come upon you: for he
“that walketh in darkness, knoweth
36. “not whither he goeth. While ye
“have light, believe in the light, that
“ye may be the children of light.

- These things spake Jesus and depart-
ed, and did hide himself from them.
37. But though he had done so many Mi-
racles before them, yet they believed
38. not on him; That the saying of Esaias
the prophet might be fulfilled, which
he spake [liiii. 1.] *Lord, who hath
believed*

Anno
Ætat. 3:
Minist. 4

o believed our report, and to whom hath Jerusalem,
 r. 33. the arm of the Lord been revealed? Joh. xii.

st. 4. Therefore they could not believe, be- 39-
 cause that Esaias said again, He hath 40-
 blinded their eyes, and hardened their
 hearts; that they should not see with
 their eyes, nor understand with their
 heart, and be converted, and I should
 heal them. These things said Esaias 41-
 when he saw his glory, and spake of
 him. Nevertheless, among the chief 42-
 rulers also, many believed on him; but
 because of the Pharisees they did not
 confess him, lest they should be put out
 of the synagogue. For they loved the 43-
 praise of men more than the praise of
 God.

* And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, 11. Mar. xi.
 and into the Temple; and when he had
 looked round about upon all things,

* Jesus cried, and said, "He that be- 44. Joh. xii.

"lieth on me, believeth not on me,
 "but on him that sent me. And he 45-
 "that seeth me, seeth him that sent
 "me. I am come a light into the 46-
 "world, that whosoever believeth on
 "me, should not abide in darkness.

"And if any man hear my words and 47-

"believe not, I judge him not; for I
 "came not to judge the world, but to
 "save the world. He that rejecteth 48-

"me, and receiveth not my words,
 "hath one that judgeth him; the word
 "that I have spoken, the same shall
 "judge him in the last day. For I 49-

"have not spoken of my self; but the

- Temple. " Father which sent me, he gave me a *Anno*
 Joh. xii. " commandment, what I should say, *Act. 33.*
 50. " and what I should speak. And I *Misist. 4.*
 " know that his commandment is life
 " everlasting: whatsoever I speak there-
 " fore, even as the Father said unto me
 " so I speak.
 Bethany, * And now the even-tide was come,
 Mar. xi. 11. *
 Mat. xxi. 17. * And he left them, and went out of
 the city into Bethany, and lodged there
 Mar. xi. 11. * with the twelve.

S E C T. CXXI.

Returning to Jerusalem. *Jesus on his return from Bethany to Jerusalem, curses the barren Fig-tree, which is forthwith dried up. His discourse concerning Faith, and pardoning of Offences.*

- Mar. xi. 12. } **A**ND on the morrow * in the morn-
 Mar. xxi. 18. } ing, * when they were come from
 Mar. xi. 12. Bethany, * as he returned into the city,
 Mar. xxi. 18. ^a he hungred, * ^b And seeing a fig-tree • Mar. xi.
 Mar. xi. 13. a far off, having leaves, he came, if hap- 12.
 ly he might find any thing thereon: and ^b Mat. xx
 when he came to it, he found nothing 19.
 but leaves: for the time of figs was not
 14. yet. And Jesus answered and said un-
 to it, *No man eat fruit of thee hereafter*
for ever. And his disciples heard it,
 Mat. xxi. 19. * And presently the fig-tree withered
 Mar. xi. 18. away. * And the Scribes and chief
 Priests heard it, and sought how they
 might

might destroy him: for they feared ^{Near Jerusa-}
 him, because all the people was as- ^{lem.}
 33. nished at his Doctrine: And when even 19.
 4. was come, he went out of the city.
 And in the morning, as they passed by, 20.
 they saw the fig-tree dried up from the
 roots. * And when the disciples saw 20. Mat. xxi.
 it, they marvelled, saying, How soon
 is the fig-tree withered away? * And 21. Mar. xi.
 Peter calling to remembrance, saith
 unto him, *Master, behold, the fig-tree*
which thou cursedst, is withered away.
 t. xxi. c And Jesus answering, saith unto them, 22.
 12. "Have faith in God. For verily I say 23.
 "unto you, that whosoever shall say
 "unto this mountain, Be thou remo-
 "ved, and be thou cast into the sea,
 "and shall not doubt in his heart, but
 "shall believe that those things which
 "he saith shall come to pass, he shall
 "have whatsoever he saith. There- 34.
 "fore I say unto you, what things so-
 "ever ye desire when ye pray, believe
 "that ye receive them, and ye shall
 "have them. And when ye stand, pray- 25.
 "ing, forgive, if ye have ought against
 "any: that your Father which is in
 "heaven, may forgive you your tres-
 "passes. But if you do not forgive,
 "neither will your Father which is in
 "heaven forgive your trespasses.

Jerusalem,

Anno

Ætat 33.

Minist. 4.

S E C T. CXXII.

Jesus silences the Sanhedrim, who asked by what authority he acted; and describes their temper in several Parables. Their rage upon this account.

- Mar. xi. 27. **A**ND they come again to Jerusalem;
 Luk. xx. 1. **A**nd it came to pass that on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief Priests and the Scribes came upon him, with the elders. And spake unto him, saying, Tell us by what authority dost thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?
- Mar. xi. 29. * And Jesus answered and said to them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.
- Mat. xxi. 45. * The baptism of John whence was it? of heaven, or of men? * Answer me. And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say from heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? * But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a prophet. * And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering, saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

* And

30 * And he began to speak unto them ^{Temple.}
 Mt. 33. by parables. * " But what think you? A ^{1. Mar. xii.}
 Mt. 4. " certain man had two sons, and he came ^{29. Mat. xxi.}
 Mk. xx. " to the first, and said, Son, go work
 " to day in my vineyard. He answered ^{29.}
 " ed and said, I will not; but after-
 " ward he repented, and went. And ^{30.}
 " he came to the second, and said like-
 " wise. And he answered and said, I
 " go Sir, and went not. Whether of ^{31.}
 " them twain did the will of his Fa-
 " ther? They say unto him, *The first.*
 Jesus saith unto them, " Verily I say
 " unto you, that the Publicans and the
 " Harlots go into the kingdom of God
 " before you. For John came unto you ^{32.}
 " in the way of righteousness, and ye
 " believed him not, but the publicans
 " and harlots believed him. And ye
 " when ye had seen it, repented not af-
 " terward, that ye might believe him.
 " Hear another parable: There was ^{33.}
 Mat. 1. " a certain householder which planted a
 k. xx. 9. " vineyard, and hedged it round about,
 " and digged a winepress in it, and
 " built a tower, and let it out to hus-
 " bandmen, and went into a far coun-
 " try * for a long time. * And when
 " the time of the fruit drew near, ^{9. Luk. xx,}
 " * ^{34. Mat. xxi.} He sent to the husbandmen a ser-
 Mat. xxi. vant, that he might receive from the ^{2. Mar. xii,}
 35, 36. " husbandmen of the fruit of the vine-
 k. xx. 10, " yard. And they caught him and beat ^{3.}
 , 12. " him, and sent him away empty,
 " And again he sent unto them another ^{4.}
 " servant; and at him they cast stones,
 " and wounded him in the head,
 " * and

- Temple. } " * and sent him away empty * shame- Anno
 11. Luk. xx. } " fully handled. And again, he sent Aetat. 33.
 4. Mar. xii. } " another, and him they killed: and Ministr. 4.
 5. " many others, bearing some, and kil-
 Luk. xx. 13. " ling some. * Then said the Lord of * Mat. xxi.
 " the vineyard, What shall I do? I will 37.
 " send my beloved son: it may be they Mar. xii. 5,
 " will reverence him when they see 7.
 14. " him. But when the husbandmen saw
 " him, they reasoned among themselves,
 " saying, This is the heir: come, let
 " us kill him, that the inheritance may
 Mat. xxi. 39. " be ours. * And they caught him, * Mat. xxi.
 " and cast him out of the vineyard, and 8, 9.
 40. " slew him. When the Lord therefore of Luk. xx. 15
 " the vineyard cometh, what will he do 16.
 41. " unto those husbandmen? They say unto
 him, *He will miserably destroy those wicked*
men, and will let out his vineyard unto
other husbandmen, which shall render him
 Luk. xx. 16. *the fruits in due season.* * And when
 they heard it, they said *God forbid.* And
 17. } [Jesus] beheld them and said, * b " Did Mar. xii.
 Mat. xxi. 42. } " ye never read in the Scriptures, The 10, 11.
 " stone which the builders rejected, the Luk. xx. 17.
 " same is become the head of the cor-
 43. " ner: This is the Lord's doing, and
 " it is marvellous in our eyes. There-
 " fore I say unto you, The kingdom of
 " God shall be taken from you, and
 " given to a nation bringing forth the
 44. " fruits thereof. * And whosoever shall * Luk. xx.
 " fall on this stone shall be broken: 18.
 " but on whomsoever it shall fall it
 " will grind him to powder.

* And

- o *^d And the chief Priests and the Temple.
t. 33. Scribes sought to lay hands on him the 19. Luk. xx.
ist. 4. same hour; and they feared the people,
it. xxi. * because they took him for a prophet. 46. Mat. xxi.
xii. 12. And when the chief Priests and Phari- 45.
sees had heard his parables, they per-
ceived * that he had spoken this para- 11. Luk. xx.
ble against them. * And they left him, 12. Mar. xii,
and went their way.
* And Jesus answered and spake un- 1. Mat. xxii,
to them again by parables, and said,
“ The kingdom of heaven is like unto 2;
“ a certain king which made a marriage
“ for his son, And sent forth his ser- 3.
“ vants to call them that were bidden
“ to the wedding: and they would not
“ come. Again he sent forth other ser- 4.
“ vants, saying, Tell them which are
“ bidden, Behold I have prepared my
“ dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are
“ killed, and all things are ready:
“ come unto the marriage. But they 5,
“ made light of it, and went their ways,
“ one to his farm, another to his mer-
“ chandize: And the remnant took his 6,
“ servants, and intreated them spiteful-
“ ly, and slew them. But when the 7. Mat. xxii,
“ king heard thereof, he was wroth:
“ and he sent forth his armies, and de-
“ stroyed those murtherers, and burnt
“ up their city. Then saith he to his 8.
“ servants, The wedding is ready, but
“ they which were bidden were not
“ worthy. Go ye therefore into the 9.
“ highways, and as many as ye shall
“ find, bid to the marriage. So those 10.
“ servants

- Temple. " servants went out into the highways, Anno
 Mar. xxii. " and gathered together all as many as ^{Ætat. 33.}
 " they found, both bad and good : and ^{Minist. 4}
 " the wedding was furnished with
 11. " guests. And when the king came in
 " to see the guests, he saw there a man
 " which had not on a wedding garment :
 12. " And he saith unto him, Friend, how
 " comest thou in hither, not having a
 " wedding garment ? And he was
 13. " speechless. Then said the king to
 " the servant, Bind him hand and foot,
 " and take him away, and cast him in-
 " to outer darkness: there shall be
 14. " weeping and gnashing of teeth. For
 " many are called, but few are chosen.

S E C T. CXXXIII.

Jerusalem. *The Jews suborn Men to find out
 Jesus's opinion concerning paying
 Tribute to the Romans, whom he
 silences by a wary answer.*

- Mar. xxii. 15. **T**hen went the Pharisees and took
 counsel how they might intangle
 Luk. xx. 20. him in his talk. * * And they watched ^{a Mar. xxii.}
 him, and sent forth spies, which should ^{16.}
 Mar. xii. 13. feign themselves just men, * certain of ^{Mar. xii. 13.}
 the Pharisees, and of the Herodians,
 Luk. xx. 20. * that they might take hold of his
 words, that so they might deliver him
 unto the power and authority of the
 Mar. xii. 14. governour. * And when they were come, ^{b Mar. xii.}
 Mar. xxii. 16. they say unto him, ^{14.} Master, * we know ^{Luk. xx.}
 that 21, 22.

Anno that thou art true, and teachest the ^{Jerusalem.}
^{Ætat. 33.} way of God in truth, neither carest thou ^{Mar. xii.}
^{Minist. 4.} for any man: for thou regardest not the
 person of men. Tell us therefore, what
 thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tri-
 bute unto Caesar, or not? * Shall we
 give, or shall we not give? * But he
 perceived their craftiness, and said unto
 them, Why tempt ye me, * ye hypocrites? {
 4 Mar. xii. d Shew me the tribute money. And they {
 15, 16, 17. brought him a penny. And he saith unto {
 Luk. xx. them, Whose is this image and super-
 24, 25. scription? They say unto him, Caesars.
 Then saith he unto them, Render therefore
 unto Caesar the things which are Caesars,
 and unto God the things that are Gods.
 * And they could not take hold of his
 words before the people. * And they
 marvelled at his answer, and held their
 peace, * and left him and went their
 way.

S E C T. CXXXIV.

*Jesus silences the Sadducees, who put
 captious questions to him concern-
 ing the resurrection. He answers
 the Lawyer who asked which was
 the greatest Commandment? And
 silences the Pharisees, by putting
 to them a question concerning the
 Messiah.*

* Mat. xxii. 23, 24. THE same day came to him * * cer- 23. Mar. xxii.
 23, 24. tain of the Sadducees (which deny 27. Luk. xx.
 Mar. xii. that there is any resurrection) and asked
 18, 19. him,

- Jerusalem. him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto Anno
Luk. xx. 28: us, If any man's brother die, having a ^{Ætat. 33.}
wife, and he die without children, that ^{Minist. 4.}
his brother should take his wife, and raise
Mat. xxii. 25: seed to his brother. *^b Now there were ^{Mar. xii. 20.}
with us seven brethren, and the first ^{Luk. xx. 29:}
when he had married a wife, deceased,
and having no issue, left his wife unto
Mar. 12. 21: his brother. *^c And the second took her, ^{Mat. xxii.}
and died, neither left he any seed. And ^{26.}
Luk. xx. 31: the third likewise. *^d And in like man- ^{Luk. xx. 30.}
ner the seven also; and they left no ^{a Mar. xii.}
32: children, and died. Last of all the wo- ^{22.}
Mar. xii. 23: man died also. *^e In the resurrection ^{Mat. xx. 27,}
therefore, when they shall rise, whose ^{28, 29.}
wife shall she be of them? for the seven ^{Luk. xx.}
24: had her to wife. And Jesus answering, ^{33, 34.}
said unto them, "Do ye not therefore
"err, because ye know not the scrip-
"tures, neither the power of God?
Luk. xx. 34: * The children of this world marry, ^{f Mat. xxii.}
35: "and are given in marriage. ^{30.} But they
"which shall be accounted worthy to ^{Mar. xii. 25.}
"obtain that world, and the resurrecti-
"on from the dead, neither marry, nor
36: "are given in marriage; neither can
"they die any more; for they are equal
"unto the angels, and are the children
"of God, being the children of the
Mar. xii. 26: resurrection. *^g And as touching the ^{Mat. xxii.}
"dead, that they rise, have ye not read ^{31, 32.}
"in the book of Moses, how in the ^{Luk. xx.}
"bush God spake unto him, saying, ^{37, 38.}
"I am the God of Abraham, and the
"God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.
27: "He is not the God of the dead, but
"the

10 " the God of the living. * For all live Jerusalem.
 16. 33. " unto him. * Ye therefore do great- 38. Luk. xx.
 1st. 4. " ly err.
 * And when the multitude heard this 27. Mar. xii.
 they were astonished at his doctrine. 33. Mat. xxiii.
 But when the Pharisees had heard that 34.
 he had put the Sadducees to silence, they
 were gathered together. Then one of 35.
 them which was a Lawyer * having 28. Mar. xii.
 heard them reasoning together, and per-
 ceiving that he had answered well,
 Mat. xii. * asked him a question, tempting him, 35. Mat. xxiii.
 and saying, *Master, which is the great* 36.
commandment in the law? Jesus said 37.
 unto him, " * The first of all the com- 29. Mar. xii.
 " mandments is, Hear, O Israel, the
 1st. xxii. " Lord our God is one Lord; And 30.
 " thou shalt love the Lord thy God
 " with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,
 " and with all thy mind, and with all thy
 " strength: * This is the first and great 38. Mat. xxiii.
 Mat. xii. " commandment. And the second is like 39.
 1st. xxii. " unto it, * namely this, *Thou shalt* 31. Mar. xii.
 " love thy neighbour as thy self: there
 " is none other commandment greater
 " than these. * On these two com- 40. Mat. xxiii.
 " mandments hang all the law and the
 Luk. xx. " prophets. * And the Scribe said 32. Mar. xii.
 unto him, *Well master, thou hast said*
the truth: for there is one God, and
there is none other but he. And to love 34.
him with all the heart, and with all the
understanding, and with all the soul, and
with all the strength, and to love his
neighbour as himself, is more than all
whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.
 And

- Jerusalem. And when Jesus saw that he answered Anno
 Mar. xii. 34. discreetly, he said unto him, *Thou art* ^{Æcat. 33.}
not far from the kingdom of God. And ^{Minist. 4.}
 no man after that, durst ask him any
 question.
- Temple.
- Mat. xxii. 41. * While the Pharisees were gathered
 Mar. xii. 35. together, Jesus asked them, * while he
 Mat. xxii. 42. taught in the temple, * saying, "What
 Mar. xii. 35. " think ye of Christ? * How say the ^{Mat. xxii.}
 " Scribes that Christ is the son of Da- ^{42, 43, 44.}
 36. " vid? For David himself said by the ^{45.}
 " Holy Ghost, [*Psal. cx. 1.*] *The Lord* ^{Luk. xx. 41,}
 " *said to my Lord, sit thou on my right* ^{42, 43, 44.}
 " *band, till I make thine enemies thy*
 37. " *foot-stool.* David therefore himself
 " calleth him Lord; and whence is he
 " then his son?
- And the common people heard him
 Mat. xxii. 46. gladly, * And no man was able to an-
 swer him a word; ^b neither durst any ^b Luk. xi.
 man (from that day forth) ask him any ^{40.}
 more questions.

S E C T. CXXV.

*Jesus vehemently inveighs against the
 Vices of the Pharisees and Lawyers.*

- Luk. xx. 45. **T**hen in the audience of all the people
 Mat. xxiii. 1. * spake Jesus to the multitude, ^{Mar. xii.}
 2. and to his disciples, saying, "The Scribes ^{38.}
 3. " and Pharisees sit in Moses seat. All ^{Luk. xx. 45,}
 " therefore whatsoever they bid you ob-
 " serve, that observe and do: but do
 " not ye after their works; for they
 " fry

- o " say, and do not. * ^b Beware of the Jerusalem^c
t. 33. " Scribes. * For they bind heavy bur-
ft. 4. " thens, and grievous to be born, and 38. Mar. xii:
uk. xx. " lay them on men's shoulders: but 4. Mat. xxiii:
" they themselves will not move them
" with one of their fingers. But all 5.
" their works they do, for to be seen of
" men: they make broad their (†) Phy-
" lacteries, and enlarge the borders of
" their garments; * they desire to 46. Luk. xx.
" walk in long robes, * and love salu- 38. Mar. xii:
it. xxiii. " tations in the market places; * and
. xx. 46. " the chief seats in the synagogues,
" and the uppermost rooms at feasts;
" * and to be called of men Rabbi, 7. Mat. xxiii:
" Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi: 8.
" for one is your master, even Christ,
" and all ye are brethren. And call no 9:
" man your father upon the earth: for
" one is your father which is in heaven.
" Neither be ye called masters: for one 10:
" is your master, even Christ. But he 11.
" that is greatest among you, shall be
" your servant. And whosoever shall
" exalt himself, shall be abased; And 12:
" he that shall humble himself, shall
" be exalted.
" But wo unto you Scribes and Pha- 13:
" risees, Hypocrites; for ye shut up
" the kingdom of heaven against men:
" for ye neither go in your selves, nei-
" ther suffer ye them that are entering to

(†) *Phylacteries* was a Parchment in which was writ the Commandments of God, which the Pharisees for Ostentation sake used to wear on their Foreheads, or tyed about their Arms.

- Jerusalem. " go in. Wo unto you Scribes and Anno
 Mat. xxiii. 14. " Pharisees, Hypocrites, " for ye de- *Actar. 33.*
 " vour widows houses, and for a pre- *Minist. 4.*
 " tence make long prayer: therefore *Mar. xii*
 " ye shall receive the greater damna- *40.*
 " tion. Wo unto you Scribes and Pha- *Luk. xx. 47.*
 " risees, Hypocrites; for ye compass
 " sea and land to make one profelyte:
 " and when he is made, ye make him
 " twofold more the child of hell than
 16. " yourselves. Wo unto you, ye blind
 " guides, which say, Whosoever shall
 " swear by the temple, it is nothing:
 " but whosoever shall swear by the gold
 17. " of the temple, he is a debtor. Ye fools
 " and blind: for whether is greater,
 " the gold or the temple that sanctifi-
 18. " eth the gold? And whosoever shall
 " swear by the altar, it is nothing: but
 " whosoever sweareth by the gift that
 19. " is upon it, he is guilty. Ye fools
 " and blind, for whether is greater, the
 " gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the
 20. " gift? Whoso therefore shall swear
 " by the altar, sweareth by it, and by
 21. " all things thereon. And whoso shall
 " swear by the temple, sweareth by it,
 " and by him that dwelleth therein.
 22. " And he that shall swear by heaven,
 " sweareth by the throne of God, and
 23. " by him that sitteth thereon. Wo un-
 " to you Scribes and Pharisees, Hypo-
 " crites; for ye pay tithes of mint and
 " anise, and cummin, and have omit-
 " ted the weightier matters of the Law,
 " judgment, mercy, and faith: these
 " ought

33. " ought ye to have done, and not to Jerusalem.
 ft. 4. " leave the other undone. Ye blind 24. Mat. xxiii
 " guides, which strain at a gnat, and
 " swallow a camel. Wo unto you 25.
 " Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites;
 " for ye make clean the outside of the
 " cup, and the platter, but within
 " they are full of extortion and excess.
 " Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that 26.
 " which is within the cup and platter,
 " that the outside of them may be clean
 " also. Wo unto you Scribes and Pha- 27.
 " risees, Hypocrites; for ye are like
 " unto whited sepulchres, which indeed
 " appear beautiful outward, but are
 " within full of dead men's bones, and
 " of all uncleanness. Even so ye also 28.
 " outwardly appear righteous unto
 " men, but within ye are full of hypo-
 " crisy and iniquity. Wo unto you 29.
 " Scribes and Pharisees, Hypocrites;
 " because ye build the tombs of the
 " prophets, and garnish the sepulchres
 " of the righteous, And say, If we had 30.
 " been in the days of our fathers, we
 " would not have been partakers with
 " them in the blood of the Prophets.
 " Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your 31.
 " selves, that ye are the children of
 " them which killed the Prophets.
 " Fill ye up then the measure of your 32.
 " fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation 33.
 " of vipers, how can ye escape the
 " damnation of hell? Wherefore be- 34.
 " hold, I send unto you prophets, and
 " wise men, and scribes; and some of

Jerusalem.
Mat. xxiii.

- “ them shall ye scourge in your syna- Anno
“ gogues, and persecute them from *Ætat. 33.*
35. “ city to city? That upon you may *Minist. 4*
“ come all the righteous blood shed
“ upon the earth, from the blood of
“ righteous Abel unto the blood of Za-
“ charias, son of Barachias, whom ye
“ slew between the temple and the al-
36. “ tar. Verily I say unto you, all these
“ things shall come upon this genera-
37. “ tion. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou
“ that killest the prophets, and stonest
“ them which are sent unto thee, how
“ often would I have gathered thy chil-
“ dren together, even as a hen gathereth
“ her chickens under her wings, and ye
38. “ would not! Behold, your house is
39. “ left unto you desolate. For I say un-
“ to you, Ye shall not see me hence-
“ forth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he
“ that cometh in the name of the
“ Lord.

S E C T. CXXVI.

Temple.

*Jesus commends the liberality of the
poor Widow Woman.*

Mar. xii.

41. ^a **A**ND Jesus sat over against the *Luk. xi*
treasury, and beheld how the *1, 2.*
people cast money into the treasury:
and many that were rich cast in much.
42. And there came a certain poor widow,
and she threw in two mites, which make
43. ^a a farthing. And he called unto him
his

- 10 his disciples, and saith unto them, Temple.
 1c. 33. " Verily I say unto you, that this poor Mar. xii.
 ist. 4. " widow hath cast more in, than all
 k. xxi. 3. " they which have cast into the treasu-
 r. xii. ry. * c For all these have of their 4. Luk. xxi,
 " abundance cast in unto the offerings
 " of God : but she of her penury hath
 " cast in all the living that she had.

S E C T. CXXVII.

*Christ foretels the destruction of Je-
 rusalem, and the punishments that
 should be inflicted on the Jews at
 his coming. He exhorts his Dis-
 ciples to vigilance, that they may
 not be unprovided at his coming,
 The Parable of the ten Virgins.
 Of the Man that went into a far
 country, and left Talents with his
 Servants to be improved. The day
 of Judgment described.*

11. xiii. d AND Jesus went out, and depar- 1. Mat. xxiv,
 ted from the temple, and his
 disciples came to him to shew the build-
 1c. xxiv. ings of the temple. * c One of his dis- 1. Mar. xiii.
 ciples saith unto him, Master, see what
 xxi. 5, manner of stones, and what buildings are
 here. And Jesus answering, said unto 3.
 him, Seest thou these great buildings?
 there shall not be left one stone upon ana-
 ther that shall not be thrown down.

Mount of
Olives.

3. And as he sat upon the Mount of Anno
Olives, over against the temple, Peter, ^{Act. 32.}
and James, and John, and Andrew asked ^{Minist. 4.}
him privately, * ^{Mat. xxiv.} Tell us when shall
these things be? and what shall be the ^{Mar. xiii.}
sign of thy coming, and of the end of the ^{4, 5, 6.}
world? And Jesus answered and said ^{Luk. xxi. 7.}
unto them, "Take heed that no man
"deceive you. For many shall come in
"my name, saying, I am Christ, and shall
"deceive many. * And the time draw-
eth near: go ye not therefore after
"them. * ^{Mar. xxiv.} And when ye shall hear of
"wars, and rumors of wars, be ye not ^{6.}
troubled: for such things must needs ^{Luk. xxi. 9.}
be, but the end shall not be yet.
"Then said he unto them, Na- ^{Mat. xxiv.}
tion shall rise against nation, and ^{7.}
kingdom against kingdom: And great ^{Mar. xiii. 8.}
earthquakes shall be in divers places,
"and famines and pestilences, and fear-
ful fights, and great signs shall there
"be from heaven. * ^{Mat. xxiv. 8.} All these are ^{Mar. xiii.}
the beginnings of sorrows. * But ^{8.}
take heed to your selves: * But be-
fore all these they shall lay hands on
"you, and persecute you; * ^{Mat. xxiv.} for they
shall deliver you up to councils; and ^{9.}
in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, ^{Luk. xxi.}
and ye shall be brought before rulers, ^{12, 13.}
and kings for my sake, for a testi-
mony against them; * and ye shall
be hated of all nations for my names
sake. * And the gospel must first be
published among all nations. But
when they shall lead you, and deliver
"you

- 10 " you up, " take no thought before. Mount of
 Mt. 33. " hand what ye shall speak, neither do Olives.
 Mt. 4. " ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall
 Mk. xxi. " be given you in that hour, that speak
 " ye: * For I will give you a mouth 15. Luk. xxi.
 " and wisdom, which all your adver-
 " saries shall not be able to gainsay,
 " nor resist, * for it is not ye that speak, 11. Mar. xiii.
 " but the holy Ghost.
 " * And there shall many be offend- 10. Mat. xxiv.
 " ed, and shall betray one another,
 " and shall hate one another. * Now 12. Mar. xiii.
 17. " the brother shall betray the brother
 " to death, and the father the son: and
 " children shall rise up against their
 " parents, and shall cause them to be
 " put to death. And ye shall be hated 13.
 " of all men for my name sake. * But 18. Luk. xxi.
 " there shall not an hair of your head
 " perish, * But he that shall endure 13. Mar. xiii.
 Mk. xxi. " to the end, the same shall be
 " saved.
 " * And many false prophets shall rise, 11. Mat. xxiv.
 " and shall deceive many. And because
 " iniquity shall abound, the love of
 " many shall wax cold. But he that 13.
 " shall endure to the end, the same shall
 " be saved. And this gospel of the 14.
 " kingdom shall be preached in all the
 " world, for a witness unto all nations,
 " and then shall the end come. * When 15.
 Mar. xiii. " ye therefore shall see the abomination
 " of desolation, spoken of by Daniel
 " the prophet, stand in the holy place,
 " * And when ye shall see Jerusalem 20. Luk. xxi.
 " compassed with armies, then know

- Mount of Olives. Mar. xiii. 14. " that the desolation thereof is nigh, Anno Ætæ. 33.
 " * P (let him that readeth understand) Minist. 4.
 15. " then let them that be in Judea, flee P Mat. xxiv, 15, 16, 17.
 " to the mountains: And let him that is on the house top not go down in- Luk. xxi. 21.
 " to the house, neither enter therein to take any thing out of his house.
 Luk. xxi. 21. " * And let them which are in the midst
 Mat. xxiv. 18. " of it depart out. * Neither let him Mar. xiii. 16.
 " which is in the field, return back to
 Luk. xxi. 22. " take his clothes. * For these be the Luk. xxi. 21,
 " days of vengeance, that all things
 " which are written may be fulfilled.
 23. " But wo unto them that are with Mat. xxiv. 19.
 " child, and to them that give suck
 Mat. xxiv. 20. " in those days. * But pray ye that Mar. xiii. 17.
 " your flight be not in the winter, nei- Mar. xiii. 18.
 Mat. xiii. 19. " ther on the sabbath day. * For in
 " those days shall be affliction, such as
 " was not from the beginning of the
 " creation which God created, unto
 Luk. xxi. 24. " this time, neither shall be. * And
 " they shall fall by the edge of the
 " sword, and shall be led away captive
 " into all nations: and Jerusalem shall
 " be trodden down of the Gentiles, un-
 " til the times of the Gentiles be ful-
 Mar. xiii. 20. " filled. * And except that the Lord Mat. xxiv, 22, 23.
 " had shortned those days, no flesh
 " should be saved: but for the elects
 " sake whom he hath chosen, he hath
 21. " shortned the days. And then, if any
 " shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ,
 " or lo, he is there; believe him not.
 Mat. xxiv. 24. " * For there shall arise false Christs, Mar. xiii.
 " and false Prophets, and shall shew
 " great

- o " great signs and wonders, insomuch Mount of
 c. 33. " that (if it were possible) they shall Olives.
 ft. 4. " deceive the very elect. * * But take 23. Mar. xiii.
 c. xxiv. " ye heed : behold I have foretold you
 " all things. * Wherefore if they shall 26. Mat. xxiv.
 " say unto you, Behold, he is in the
 " desert, go not forth : behold, he is
 " in the secret chambers, believe it not.
 " For as the lightning cometh out of 27.
 " the east, and shineth even unto the
 " west : so shall also the coming of the
 " son of man be. For wherefoever the 28.
 " carcase is, there will the eagles be ga-
 " thered together.
 n. xxiv. " * * But in those days, after that 24. Mar. xiii.
 " tribulation, the sun shall be darkened,
 " and the moon shall not give her light :
 " And the stars of heaven shall fall, 25.
 " and the powers that are in heaven
 " shall be shaken. * And there shall be 25. Luk. xxv.
 " signs in the sun, and in the moon, and
 " in the stars ; and upon the earth di-
 " stress of nations, with perplexity,
 " the sea and the waves roaring ; mens 26.
 " hearts failing them for fear, and for
 " looking after those things which are
 " coming on the earth : for the powers
 " of heaven shall be shaken. * And 30. Mat. xxiv.
 " then shall appear the sign of the son
 " of man in heaven : and then shall all
 far. xiii. " the tribes of the earth mourn, and
 c. xxi. 27. " they shall see the son of man coming
 " in the clouds of heaven, with pow-
 lat. xxiv. " er and great glory. * And then 27. Mar. xiii.
 " shall he send his angels, and shall ga-
 " ther together his elect from the four
 " winds

- Mount of Olives. " winds, from the uttermost part of Anno
 Mar. xiii. " the earth to the uttermost part of ^{Act. 33.}
 Luk. xxi. 29. " heaven. * And when these things be- ^{Minist. 4.}
 gin to come to pass, then look up,
 " and lift up your heads; for your re-
 29. " demption draweth nigh. And he
 Mat. xxiv. 32. " spake to them a parable, * * Now ^{Mar. xiii.}
 Luk. xxi. 29. " learn a parable of the fig-tree: * ^{28.} And
 30. " all the trees; When they now shoot ^{Luk. xxi. 29.}
 " forth, ye see and know of your own ^{Mat. xxi.}
 " selves, that summer is nigh at hand. ^{32, 33.}
 31. " So likewise ye when ye see these ^{Mar. xiii.}
 " things come to pass, know ye that ^{28, 29.}
 " the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.
 Mat. xxiv. 34. " * Verily I say unto you, This gene- ^{Mar. xiii.}
 " ration shall not pass, till all these ^{30, 31.}
 35. " things be fulfilled. Heaven and ^{Luk. xxi.}
 " earth shall pass away, but my words ^{32, 33.}
 Mar. xiii. 32. " shall not pass away. * ^d But of that ^{Mat. xxiv.}
 " day and that hour knoweth no man, ^{36.}
 " no not the angels which are in hea-
 Mat. xxiv. 36. " ven, neither the son, * but the father
 " only.
 Luk. xxi. 34. " * And take heed to your selves,
 " lest at any time your hearts be over-
 " charged with surfeiting, and drunken-
 " ness, and cares of this life, and so
 " that day come upon you unawares.
 35. " For as a snare shall it come on all
 " them that dwell on the face of
 36. " the whole earth. Watch ye there-
 " fore, and pray always that ye may be
 " accounted worthy to escape all these
 " things that shall come to pass, and to
 Mat. xxiv. 42. " stand before the son of man. * Watch ^{Mar. xiii.}
 " therefore, for ye know not what hour the ^{33.}
 " Lord

nno
 Mat. 33.
 Matt. 4.

" Lord doth come. But as the days of
 " Noe were, so shall also the coming
 " of the son of man be. For as in the
 " days that were before the flood, they
 " were eating and drinking, marrying
 " and giving in marriage, until the day
 " that Noe entred into the ark; and
 " knew not until the flood came, and
 " took them all away; so shall also
 " the coming of the son of man be.
 " Then shall two be in the field, the
 " one shall be taken, and the other
 " left. Two women shall be grinding
 " at the mill, the one shall be taken,
 " and the other left. But know this,
 " that if the good man of the house
 " had known in what watch the thief
 " would come, he would have watch-
 " ed, and would not have suffered his
 " house to be broken up. Therefore be
 " ye also ready: for in such an hour
 " as you think not, the son of man
 " cometh. * For the son of man is as
 " a man taking a far journey, who left
 " his house, and gave authority to his
 " servants, and to every man his work,
 " and commanded the porter to watch.
 " * Who then is a faithful and wise
 " servant, whom his Lord hath made
 " ruler over his household, to give them
 " meat in due season? Blessed is that
 " servant, whom his Lord when he
 " cometh, shall find so doing. Verily,
 " I say unto you, that he shall make
 " him ruler over all his goods. But
 " and if that evil servant shall say in
 " his

Mount of
 Olives,
 37. Mat. xxiv.
 38.
 39.
 40.
 41.
 42.
 43.
 44.
 45. Mar. xiii.
 46.
 47.
 48.

Mount of
Olives.

Mat. xxvi.

“ his heart, My Lord delayeth his com-
“ ing, And shall begin to smite his fellow

49. “ servants, and to eat and drink with

50. “ the drunken : The Lord of that ser-

“ vant shall come in a day when he

“ looketh not for him, and in an hour

51. “ that he is not aware of ; And shall

“ cut him asunder, and appoint him

“ his portion with the hypocrites : there

“ shall be weeping and gnashing of

Mat. xiii.

35. “ teeth. * Watch ye therefore, (for

“ ye know not when the master of the

“ house cometh ; at even, or at mid-

Mar. xiii.

36. “ night, or at the cock crowing, or in

“ the morning.) Lest coming sudden-

“ ly, he find you sleeping. And

“ what I say unto you, I say unto all,

“ watch.

Mat. xxv.

1. “ * Then shall the kingdom of heaven

“ be likened unto ten vigin, which took

“ their lamps, and went forth to meet

2. “ the Bridegroom, And five of them

“ were wise, and five were foolish.

3. “ They that were foolish took their

“ lamps, and took no oil with them.

4. “ But the wise took oil in their vessels

5. “ with their lamps. While the bride-

“ groom tarried, they all slumbered and

6. “ slept. And at midnight there was a

“ cry made, Behold the bridegroom

“ cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7. “ Then all those virgins arose, and

8. “ trimmed their lamps. And the foolish

“ said unto the wise, Give us of your

“ oil, for our lamps are gone out.

9. “ But the wise answered, saying, Not

“ so ;

Anno

Ætat. 33

Minut. 4

33. " so; left there be not enough for us ^{Mount of}
 ft. 4. " and you: but go ye rather to them ^{Olives.}
 " that sell, and buy for your selves. ^{Mat. XXV.}
 " And while they went to buy, ^{10.}
 " bridegroom came, and they that were
 " ready, went in with him to the mar-
 " riage, and the door was shut. After ^{11:}
 " ward came also the other virgins,
 " saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But ^{12.}
 " he answered and said, Verily I say
 " unto you, I know you not. Watch ^{13.}
 " therefore, for ye know neither the
 " day nor the hour, wherein the son of
 " man cometh.
 " For the kingdom of heaven is as a ^{14.}
 " man travelling into a far country,
 " who called his own servants, and de-
 " livered unto them his goods: And ^{15.}
 " unto one he gave five talents, to ano-
 " ther two; and to another one, and
 " to every man according to his several
 " ability, and straightway took his
 " journey. Then he that had received ^{16.}
 " the five talents, went and traded with
 " the same, and made them other five
 " talents. And likewise he that had ^{17.}
 " received two, he also gained other
 " two. But he that had received one, ^{18.}
 " went and digged in the earth, and
 " hid his Lord's money. After a long ^{19.}
 " time, the Lord of those servants com-
 " eth, and reckoneth with them. And so ^{20.}
 " he that had received five talents, came
 " and brought other five talents, say-
 " ing, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me
 " five talents: behold, I have gained
 " besides

Mount of
Olives.

Mat. xxv.

- “besides them five talents more. His
 “Lord said unto him, well done, thou
 21. “good and faithful servant; thou hast
 “been faithful over a few things, I
 “will make thee ruler over many
 “things: enter thou into the joy of
 22. “thy Lord. He also that had received
 “two talents, came and said, Lord,
 “thou deliveredst unto me two talents:
 “behold, I have gained two other ta-
 23. “lents besides them. His Lord said
 “unto him, Well done, good and
 “faithful servant; thou hast been faith-
 “ful over a few things, I will make
 “thee ruler over many things: enter
 24. “thou into the joy of thy Lord. Then
 “he which had received the one talent,
 “came and said, Lord, I know thee
 “that thou art an hard man, reaping
 “where thou hast not sown, and ga-
 “thering where thou hast not strawed.
 25. “And I was afraid, and went and hid
 “thy talent in the earth: lo, there
 26. “thou hast that is thine. His Lord
 “answered and said unto him, Thou
 “wicked and slothful servant, thou
 “knewest that I reap where I sowed
 “not, and gather where I have not
 27. “strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to
 “have put my money to the exchangers,
 “and then at my coming I should
 “have received mine own with usury.
 28. “Take therefore the talent from him,
 “and give unto him which hath
 29. “ten talents. For unto every one that
 “hath, shall be given, and he shall

Anno
Erat. 35
Minist. 4

“have

10 " have abundance : but from him that ^{Mount of}
 it. 33. " hath not, shall be taken away even ^{Olives.}
 ist. 4. " that which he hath. And cast ye the ^{30. Mat. xxv.}
 " unprofitable servant into outer dark-
 " ness: there shall be weeping and
 " gnashing of teeth.
 " When the son of man shall come in ^{31.}
 " his glory, and all the holy angels
 " with him, then shall he sit upon the
 " throne of his glory. And before him ^{32.}
 " shall be gathered all nations; and he
 " shall separate them one from another,
 " as a shepherd divideth his sheep from
 " the Goats: And he shall set the sheep ^{33.}
 " on his right hand, but the goats on
 " the left. Then shall the king say ^{34.}
 " unto them on his right hand, Come
 " ye blessed of my Father inherit the
 " kingdom prepared for you from the
 " foundation of the world. For I was ^{35.}
 " an hungred, and ye gave me meat:
 " I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink:
 " I was a stranger, and ye took me in:
 " naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, ^{36.}
 " and ye visited me: I was in prison,
 " and ye came unto me.
 " Then shall the righteous answer ^{37.}
 " him, saying, Lord, when saw we
 " thee an hungred, and fed thee? or
 " thirsty, and gave thee drink? When ^{38.}
 " saw we thee a stranger, and took
 " thee in? or naked, and clothed
 " thee? Or when saw we thee sick or ^{39.}
 " in prison, and came unto thee? And ^{40.}
 " the king shall answer, and say unto
 " them, Verily I say unto you, In as
 " much

Mount of
Olives.
Mat. xxv.

- “ much as ye have done it unto one of Anno
“ the least of these my brethren, ye have *Act. 33*
“ done it unto me. *Minist. 4*
41. “ Then shall he say also unto them
“ on the left hand, Depart from me,
“ ye cursed, into everlasting fire, pre-
“ pared for the devil and his angels.
42. “ For I was an hungred, and ye gave
“ me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye
43. “ gave me no drink: I was a stranger,
“ and ye took me not in; naked, and
“ ye clothed me not; sick, and in pri-
“ son, and ye visited me not.
44. “ Then shall they also answer him,
“ saying, Lord, when saw we thee an
“ hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or
“ naked, or sick, or in prison, and did
“ not minister to thee?
45. “ Then shall he answer them, saying,
“ Verily, I say unto you, In as much
“ as ye did it not to one of the least of
“ these, ye did it not to me. And these
“ shall go away into everlasting punish-
“ ment: but the righteous into life
“ eternal.

S E C T. CXXVIII.

Jesus teaches daily in the Temple.

- Luk. xxi. 37. **A**ND in the day time he was teach-
ing in the temple, and at night
he went out, and abode in the mount
that is called the Mount of Olives.
38. And all the people came early in the
morning to him in the temple, for to
hear him.

S E C T.

SECT. CXXIX.

Jerusalem.

33.
R. 4.

Two days before the Passover Jesus foretels his death, which the Sanhedrim had determined.

AND it came to pass when Jesus ^{1. Mat. xxvi.} had finished all these sayings, ^{xiv.1.} he said unto his disciples, ^{xxii.1.} * *Ye know 2. that after two days is the feast of the passover, * and of unleavened bread: { 1. Mar. xiv. * and the son of man is betrayed to be crucified. Then assembled together the 3. chief Priests and the Scribes, and the Elders of the people, to the palace of the high Priest, who was called Cai-
phas, * ^{xxvi.} And the chief Priests and ^{1. Mar. xiv.} the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.
^{xxii.2.} * ^{xiv.2.} But they said, *not on the feast day, 5. Mat. xxvi.* lest there be an uproar among the people, ^{2. Luk. xxi.} * for they feared the people.*

SECT. CXXX.

Jesus is anointed in the house of Simon. Bethany.

^{xiv.3.} NOW when Jesus was in Bethany, ^{6. Mat. xxvi.} in the house of Simon the leper. There came unto him a woman having ^{7.} an alabaster box * of ointment of Spike-^{3. Mat. xiv.} nard, very precious; and she brake the ^{xxvi.} box, * and poured it on his head, * as ^{7. Mat. xxvi.} he sat at meat. ^{xiv.4.} But when his disci-^{4.} ples saw it, they had indignation, say-^{5. Mar. xiv.} ing, *To what purpose is this waste * of the*

- Bethany. *the ointment made? For it might have Anno
been sold for more than three hundred ^{Ætat. 33}
pence, and have been given to the poor. ^{Minist. 4.} * Mat. xxvi.*
- Mat. xxvi. 10. *And they murmured against her. *^d When-
Jesus understood it, he said to them, ^dMar. xiv. 6.
" Why trouble ye the woman? for she
" has wrought a good work upon me.
Mar. xiv. 7. " * For ye have the poor with you al- * Mat. xxvi.
" ways, and when soever ye will, ye ^{11.}
" may do them good: but me ye have
" not always. She hath done what
Mat. xxvi. 12. " she could. * For in that she hath
" poured this ointment on my body;
Mar. xiv. 8. " * She is come aforehand to anoint * Mat. xxvi.
Mat. xxvi. 13. " my body to the burying. * ⁸ Verily ^{12.}
" I say unto you, wheresoever this ^{Mar. xiv. 9.}
" gospel shall be preached in the whole
" world, there shall also this, that
" this woman hath done, be told for a
" memorial of her.*

S E C T. CXXXI.

Jerusalem. *Judas bargains with the Sanhedrim to
betray Jesus.*

- Luk. xxii. 3. **T**hen entred Satan into Judas, surna-
med Iscariot, being of the number
4. of the twelve. * And he went his way, * Mat. xxvi.
and communed with the chief Priests and ^{14.}
Captains, how he might betray him un-
Mat. xxvi. 15. to them. * And said unto them, *What
will ye give me, and I will deliver him un-*
Mar. xix. 11. *to you? * And when they heard it, they
were glad, and promised to give him*
Mat. xxvi. 15. *money. *^b And they covenanted with ^b Luk. xxii.*
Luk. xxii. 6. *him for thirty pieces of silver. * And
he*

o he promised, *^c And from that time he Jerusalem.
 t. 33. sought opportunity to betray him * un- 6. Luk. xxii.
 ft. 4. to them in the absence of the multitude. Mat. xxvi. 16^c
 r. xiv.

xxii. 6.

S E C T. CXXXII.

*The fourth Passover after Christ's
 Baptism. Jesus celebrates the
 last Passover with his Disciples,
 foretels the Treachery of Judas,
 and institutes the Eucharist.*

Then came the day of unleavened 7. Luk. xxiii.
 bread, when the passover must be
 f. xiv. killed. *^a Now the first day of the 17. Mat. xxvi.
 feast of unleavened bread, * when they 12. Mar. xiv. }
 killed the passover, * the disciples came 17. Mat. xxvi. }
 it. xxvi. to Jesus, saying unto him, *^b Where 12. Mar. xiv.
 xxii. wilt thou that we go and prepare that
 ar. xiv. thou mayest eat the passover? *^c And 8. Luk. xxii.
 he sent Peter and John, saying, *Go and
 prepare us the passover, that we may eat.*
 t. xxvi. And he said unto them, " *^a Go ye 10.
 xiv. 13. " into the city, * Behold when ye are 13. Mar. xiv. }
 " entered into the city, there shall a man 10. Luk. xxii. }
 " meet you, bearing a pitcher of water:
 " follow him into the house where he
 " entresth in. * And wheresoever he 14. Mar. xiv.
 at. xxv. " shall go in, * say ye to the good man
 " of the house, The master saith, * My 18. Mat. xxiv.
 . xxii. " time is at hand, I will keep the pas-
 " soever at thy house with my disciples.
 ik. xxii. " *^f Where is the guest chamber, where 14. Mar. xiv.
 12. " I shall eat the passover with my dis-
 " ciples? And he will shew you a 15.
 " large

- Jerusalem. " large (†) upper-room furnished and Anno
 " prepared: there make ready for us. *Evan. 33.*
 Mar. xiv. 16. ^a And his disciples went forth, and came *Minist. 4.*
 into the city, and found as he had said *Mat. xxvi.*
 unto them: and they made ready the *Luk. xxii.*
 Mat. xxvi. 20. passover. ^b Now when the even was *13.*
 Luk. xxii. 14. come, he sat down, * and the twelve *Mar. xiv.*
 Mar. xiv. 18. apostles with him. * And as they sat, *Luk. xxii.*
 and did eat, Jesus said, * ^c Verily I say *14.*
 Mat. xxvi. 21. unto you, that one of you shall betray *Mar. xiv.*
 me, * But behold, the hand of him that *18.*
 Luk. xxii. 21. betrayeth me, is with me on the table,
 Mar. xiv. 18. * which eateth with me. * ^d And they *Mar. xiv.*
 Mat. xxii. 22. were exceeding sorrowful, and began *19, 20.*
 every one of them to say unto him, *Luk. xxii.*
 23. Lord, is it I? And he answered and *23.*
 said, *He that dippeth his hand with me*
in the dish, the same shall betray me.
 Mar. xiv. 21. * ^e The son of man indeed goeth, as it *Mat. xxvi.*
 is written of him: but wo to that man *24.*
 by whom the son of man is betrayed: *Luk. xxii.*
 good were it for that man if he had never *22.*
 Mat. xxvi. 25. been born.. * Then Judas which be-
 trayed him, answered, and said, *Master,*
is it I? He said unto him, *thou hast*
said.

(†) Upper room, It was their private house of Oratory in the uppermost part of their dwelling Houses. The upper Rooms in Scripture, were places in that part of the House which was highest from the ground, set apart by the Jews for their private Occasions and Devotions, to be address'd towards Solomon's Temple, or the place of that, which for the Consecration and conveniency of recess, the Apostles made use of in the Christian way. See *Acts* i. 13. ix. 37, 39. xx. 8, 9. *Dan.* vi. 10. *Jer.* xxii. 13, 14. *Gregory.*

And

- Anno 1 And as they were eating, Jesus took ^{Jerusalem.}
^{Ætat. 33.} bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and ^{26. Mat. xvi.}
^{Minist. 4.} gave it to the disciples, and said, *Take,*
^{1 Mar. xiv.} eat; * *This is my body which is given* ^{19. Luk. xxii}
^{22.} *for you: this do in remembrance of me,*
^{Luk. xxii.} Likewise also * he took the cup * after
^{19.} supper, * ^{20. Luk. xxii.} And when he had given ^{23. Mar. xiv.}
^{1 Cor. xi. 24.} thanks, he gave it to them, And he said ^{Luk. xxii. 20.}
^{1 Mat. xxvi.} unto them, * *Drink ye also of it: * This* ^{23. Mar. xiv.}
^{27.} *cup is the new testament in my blood,* ^{24. Mat. xvi.}
^{1 Cor. xi. 25.} * *which is shed for many for the remis-* ^{20. Luk. xxii.}
^{1 Mat. xxvi.} *sion of sins. * This do ye, as oft as* ^{28. Mat. xxvi.}
^{28.} *ye drink it, in remembrance of me.* ^{25. 1 Cor. xi.}
^{1 Cor. xi. 25.} * And they all drank of it. ^{23. Mar. xiv.}
 * And he said unto them, " With ^{15. Luk. xxii.}
 " desire I have desired to eat this pas-
 " soever with you before I suffer. For ^{16.}
 " I say unto you, I will not any more
 " eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the
 " kingdom of God. And he took the ^{17.}
 " cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take
 " this, and divide it among your selves.
 * ^{1 Mat. xxvi.} For I say unto you, I will not drink ^{18.}
^{29.} of the fruit of the vine, * until that ^{29. Mat. xxvi.}
^{Mar. xiv. 25} day when I drink it new in my Fa-
^{Luk. xxii.} ther's kingdom.
^{18.}

Jerusalem.

Anno
Ætar. 33
Minist. 4

S E C T. CXXXIII.

Jesus recommends Humility to his Apostles, washes their feet. He acquaints them that his death draws nigh, and should be betrayed by Judas. His discourse to them again of his death, commands the Apostles to love one another, forewarns Peter of his denial of him, and comforts his Apostles.

Joh. xliii.

1. **N**OW before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.
2. And supper being ended (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him.)
3. Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God.

Luk. xxii. 24.

- * And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. And he said unto them,
- "The kings of the Gentiles exercise Lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them, are
26. "called benefactors. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among
- "you,

no
 at. 33.
 list. 4.

“ you, let him be as the younger ; and Jerusalem.
 “ he that is chief, as he that doth serve. Luk. xxii.
 “ For whether is greater, he that sitteth 27.
 “ at meat, or he that serveth ? is not
 “ he that sitteth at meat ? but I am a-
 “ mong you as he that serveth. Ye 28.
 “ are they which have continued with
 “ me in my temptations. And I ap. 29.
 “ point unto you a kingdom, as my Fa-
 “ ther has appointed unto me ; That ye 30.
 “ may eat and drink at my table in my
 “ kingdom, and sit on thrones, judg-
 “ ing the twelve tribes of Israel.
 * He riseth from supper, and laid 4. Joh. xiii,
 aside his garments, and took a towel,
 and girded himself. After that, he pour- 5.
 eth water into a bason, and began to
 wash the disciples feet, and to wipe
 them with the towel wherewith he was
 girded. Then cometh he to Simon Pe- 6.
 ter : and Peter saith unto him, *Lord,*
dost thou wash my feet ? Jesus answer- 7.
 ed and said unto him, *What I do thou*
knowest not now ; but thou shalt know
hereafter. Peter saith unto him, *Thou 8.*
shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answer-
 ed him, *If I wash thee not, thou hast no*
part with me. Simon Peter saith unto 9.
 him, *Lord, not my feet only, but also*
my hands and my head. Jesus saith to 10.
 him, *He that is washed, needeth not,*
save to wash his feet, but is clean every
whit : and ye are clean, but not all.
 For he knew who should betray him ; 11.
 therefore said he, *Ye are not all clean.*

Jerusalem.

Joh. xiii.

So after he had washed their feet, ^{Anno}
 and had taken his garments, and was ^{Act. 33.}
 set down again, he said unto them, ^{Minist. 4.}
 " Know ye what I have done to you?
 13. " Ye call me Master, and Lord; and
 14. " say well; for so I am. If I then
 " your Lord and Master, have washed
 " your feet, ye also ought to wash one
 15. " anothers feet. For I have given you
 " an example, that ye should do as I
 16. " have done to you. Verily, verily I
 " say unto you, The servant is not
 " greater than his Lord, neither he that
 " is sent, greater than he that sent
 17. " him. If ye know these things, hap-
 18. " py are ye if ye do them. I speak
 " not of you all, I know whom I have
 " chosen: but that the Scripture may be
 " fulfilled, He that eateth bread with
 " me, hath lift up his heel against me.
 19. " Now I tell you before it come, that
 " when it is come to pass, ye may be-
 20. " lieve that I am he. Verily, verily I say
 " unto you, He that receiveth whomso-
 " ever I send, receiveth me, and he that re-
 " ceiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.
 21. When Jesus had thus said, he was
 troubled in spirit, and testified, and said,
Verily, verily I say unto you; that one
 22. *of you shall betray me.* Then the dis-
 ciples looked one on another, doubting
 23. of whom he spake. Now there was
 leaning on Jesus bosom one of his dis-
 24. ciples, whom Jesus loved. Simon Pe-
 ter therefore beckned to him, that he
 should ask who it should be of whom
 he

mo he spake. He then lying on Jesus breast, Jerusalem.
 22. 33. faith unto him, *Lord, who is it?* Jesus 25. Joh. xiii.
 inist. 4. answered, *He it is to whom I shall give 26.
 a sop, when I have dipped it.* And when
 he had dipped the sop, he gave it to
 Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. And 27.
 after the sop, Satan entred into him.
 Then said Jesus unto him, *That thou
 doest, do quickly.*

Now no man at the table knew for 28.
 what intent he spake this unto him.
 For some of them thought because Ju- 29.
 das had the bag, that Jesus had said un-
 to him, Buy those things that we have
 need of against the feast: or that he
 should give something to the poor.

He then having received the sop, 30.
 went immediately out: and it was night.
 Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus 31.
 said, "Now is the son of man glori-
 fied, and God is glorified in him. If 32.
 "God be glorified in him, God shall
 "also glorifie him in himself, and
 "straightway glorifie him. Little chil- 33.
 "dren, yet a little while I am with you.
 "Ye shall seek me; and as I said unto
 "the Jews, whither I go, ye cannot
 "come; so now I say unto you. A 34.
 "new commandment I give unto you,
 "That ye love one another, as I have
 "loved you, that ye also love one ano-
 "ther. By this shall all men know 35.
 "that ye are my disciples, if ye have
 "love one to another.

Simon Peter said unto him, *Lord, 36.
 whither goest thou?* Jesus answered him,
 Whither

- Jerusalem. *Whether I go, thou canst not follow me* Anno
 Joh. xiii. *now; but thou shalt follow me after-* *Act. 33*
 37. *wards.* Peter said unto him, Lord, *Minist. 4*
- Luk. xxii. 31. *why cannot I follow thee now? * And*
 the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold,
 Satan hath desired to have you, that he
 32. *may sift you as wheat, But I have pray-*
 ed for thee that thy faith fail not, and
 when thou art converted, strengthen thy
 33. *brethren.* And he said unto him, Lord,
 I am ready to go with thee both into
 Joh. xiii. 37. *prison, and to death. * I will lay down*
*my life for thy sake. * Jesus answered * Luk. xxi*
 him, *Wilt thou lay down thy life for my* 34.
sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee,
- Luk. xxii. 34. *The cock shall not crow, * this day, * before * Joh. xi*
thou shalt thrice deny that thou know- 38.
est me.
35. And he said unto them, *When I sent*
you without purse, and scrip, and shoes,
lacked ye any thing? And they said,
 36. *Nothing.* Then said he to them, " But
 " now he that hath a purse, let him
 " take it, and likewise his scrip: and
 " he that hath no sword, let him sell
 37. " his garment, and buy one. For I say
 " unto you, that this that is written,
 " must yet be accomplished in me,
 " [Isaiah liii. 12.] *And he was reckoned*
 " *among the transgressors: for the things*
 38. " *concerning me have an end.* And
 they said, Lord, behold, here are two
 swords. And he said unto them, *It is*
enough.
- Joh. xiv. 1. " * Let not your heart be troubled :
 " ye believe in God, believe also in me.
 " In

ino " In my Father's house are many man- Jerusalem.
 tat 33. " fions; if it were not so, I would 2. Joh. xiv.
 nist. 4. " have told you: I go to prepare a
 " place for you. And if I go and pre- 3.
 " pare a place for you, I will come a-
 " gain, and receive you unto my self,
 " that where I am, there ye may be
 " also. And whither I go ye know, 4.
 " and the way ye know. Thomas 5.
 " saith unto him, *Lord, we know not*
 whither thou goest, and how can we know
 the way? Jesus saith unto him, " I am 6.
 " the way, and the truth, and the life:
 " no man cometh to the Father but by
 " me. If ye had known me, ye should 7.
 " have known my Father also: and
 " from henceforth ye know him, and
 " have seen him. Philip saith unto him, 8.
 Lord shew us the Father, and it sufficeth
 us. Jesus saith unto him, " Have I been 9.
 " so long time with you, and yet hast
 " thou not known me, Philip? he that
 " hath seen me hath seen the Father;
 " and how sayest thou then, shew us
 " the Father? Believest thou not that 10.
 " I am in the Father, and the Father in
 " me? the words that I speak unto you,
 " I speak not of my self: but the Fa-
 " ther that dwelleth in me, he doth the
 " works. Believe me that I am in the 11.
 " Father, and the Father in me: or
 " else believe me for the very works
 " sake. Verily, verily I say unto you, 12.
 " He that believeth on me, the works
 " that I do, shall he do also, and greater
 " works than these shall he do, be-
 " cause

- Jerusalem. Anno
Joh. xiv. 13. " whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4
14. " that will I do, that the Father may
15. " be glorified in the son. If ye shall
16. " ask any thing in my name, I will do
17. " it. If ye love me, keep my com-
18. " mandments. And I will pray the
19. " Father, and he shall give you another
20. " comforter, that he may abide with
21. " you for ever; even the spirit of truth,
22. " whom the world cannot receive,
23. " because it seeth him not, neither
24. " knoweth him: but ye know him,
25. " for he dwelleth with you, and shall
26. " be in you. I will not leave you com-
27. " fortless; I will come to you, Yet a
28. " little while, and the world seeth me
29. " no more: but ye see me: because I
30. " live, ye shall live also. At that day
31. " ye shall know that I am in my Fa-
32. " ther, and you in me, and I in you.
33. " He that hath my commandments,
34. " and keepeth them, he it is that lo-
35. " veth me: and he that loveth me shall
36. " be loved of my Father, and I will
37. " love him, and will manifest my self
38. " to him.
39. " Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot,
40. " *Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest*
41. " *thy self unto us, and not unto the world?*
42. " Jesus answered and said unto him, " If
43. " a man love me, he will keep my
44. " words: and my Father will love him,
45. " and we will come to him, and make
46. " our abode with him. He that loveth
47. " me not, keepeth not my sayings:
48. " and

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

“ and the word which you hear, is not Jerusale^m.
 “ mine, but the Fathers which sent Joh. xiv.
 “ me.
 “ These things have I spoken unto²⁵.
 “ you, being yet present with you.
 “ But the comforter which is the holy 26.
 “ Ghost, whom the Father will send
 “ in my name, he shall teach you all
 “ things, and bring all things to your
 “ remembrance, whatsoever I have said
 “ unto you.
 “ Peace I leave with you, my peace 27.
 “ I give unto you, not as the world
 “ giveth, give I unto you. Let not
 “ you heart be troubled, neither let it
 “ be afraid. Ye have heard how I said 28.
 “ unto you, I go away, and come again
 “ unto you. If ye loved me, ye would
 “ rejoice, because I said, I go unto the
 “ Father: for my Father is greater than
 “ I. And now I have told you before 29.
 “ it come to pass, that when it is come
 “ to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter, 30.
 “ I will not talk much with you: for
 “ the prince of this world cometh, and
 “ hath nothing in me. But that the 31.
 “ world may know that I love the Fa-
 “ ther; and as the Father gave me
 “ commandment, even so I do. Arise 32. Mat. xxvi.
 “ let us go hence. * * And when they
 “ had sung an hymn, they went out.

• Mar. xlv.
26.

Mount of
Olives.

S E C T. CXXXIV.

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

Jesus with his Apostles goes to the Mount of Olives. Exhorts them to observe his Law, and have mutual affection for one another. Foretels the calamities should befall them on account of the Gospel, comforts them, and promises them the holy Ghost. Prays to God for them.

Luk. xxii. 39.

AND [Jesus] came out, and went, ^a as he was wont, ^b to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. [And he thus spake to them.] ^c Mat. xxvi 30.
Mar. xiv. 26

Joh. xv.

1. " * I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch
2. " in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth
3. " fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are
4. " clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and
5. " I in you, as the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the
6. " vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, and ye are the branches. He that abideth
7. " in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without
8. " me ye can do nothing. If a man
9. " abide

ano
 car. 33.
 inist. 4.

“ abide not in me, he is cast forth
 “ as a branch, and is withered; and
 “ men gather them, and cast them in-
 “ to the fire, and they are burned. If
 “ ye abide in me, and my words abide
 “ in you, ye shall ask what ye will,
 “ and it shall be done unto you. Here
 “ in is my Father glorified, that ye
 “ bear much fruit, so shall ye be my
 “ disciples.
 “ As the Father has loved me, so
 “ have I loved you: continue ye in my
 “ love. If ye keep my commandments,
 “ ye shall abide in my love: even as I
 “ have kept my Father’s commandments,
 “ and abide in his love. These things
 “ have I spoken to you, that my joy
 “ might remain in you, and that your
 “ joy might be full.
 “ This is my commandment, That
 “ ye love one another as I have loved
 “ you. Greater love hath no man than
 “ this, that a man lay down his life
 “ for his friends. Ye are my friends;
 “ if ye do whatsoever I command you.
 “ Henceforth I call ye not servants; for
 “ the servant knoweth not what his
 “ Lord doeth: but I have called you
 “ friends; for all things that I have
 “ heard of my Father, I have made
 “ known unto you. Ye have not cho-
 “ sen me; but I have chosen you, and
 “ ordained you, that you should go and
 “ bring forth fruit, and that your fruit
 “ should remain: that whatsoever ye
 “ shall ask of the Father in my name,
 “ he

Mount of
 Olives.
 Joh. xv.

Mount of
Olives.

Joh. xv.

- “ he may give it you. These things I
 “ command you that ye love one ano-
 “ ther. If the world hate you, ye
 “ know that it hated me before it ha-
 “ ted you. If ye were of the world,
 “ the world would love his own; but
 “ because ye are not of the world, but
 “ I have chosen you out of the world,
 “ therefore the world hateth you. Re-
 “ member the word that I said unto
 “ you, The servant is not greater than
 “ the Lord. If they have persecuted
 “ me, they will also persecute you, if
 “ they have kept my saying, they will
 “ keep yours also. But all these things
 “ will they do unto you for my names
 “ sake, because they know not him
 “ that sent me. If I had not come and
 “ spoke unto them, they had not had
 “ sin: but now they have no cloke for
 “ their sin. He that hateth me, hateth
 “ my Father also. If I had not done
 “ among them the works which none
 “ other man did, they had not had sin:
 “ but now have they both seen, and
 “ hated both me and my Father. But
 “ this cometh to pass that the word
 “ might be fulfilled that is written in
 “ their law, They hated me without a
 “ cause. But when the comforter is
 “ come, whom I will send unto you
 “ from the Father, even the Spirit of
 “ truth, which proceedeth from the
 “ Father, he shall testify of me. And
 “ ye also shall bear witness, because ye
 “ have been with me from the begin-
 “ ning. “ These

Anno
Ætat. 33
Minist. 4

anno
cat. 33.
inist. 4.

“ These things have I spoken unto Mount of
“ you, that ye should not be offended. Olives.
“ They shall put you out of the syna- 1. John. xvi
“ gogues: yea the time cometh, that 2.
“ whosoever killeth you will think that
“ he doth God service. And these 3.
“ things will they do unto you, be-
“ cause they have not known the Fa-
“ ther, nor me. But these things have 4.
“ I told you, that when the time shall
“ come, ye may remember that I told
“ you of them. And these things I
“ said not unto you at the beginning,
“ because I was with you. But now 5.
“ I go my way to him that sent me,
“ and none of you asketh me, whither
“ goest thou? But because I have said 6.
“ these things unto you, sorrow hath
“ filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell 7.
“ you the truth: it is expedient for you
“ that I go away: for if I go not a-
“ way, the comforter will not come
“ unto you; but if I depart, I will
“ send him unto you. And when he is 8.
“ come, he will reprove the world of
“ sin, and of righteousness, and of judg-
“ ment: Of sin because they believe 9.
“ not me; Of righteousness, because I 10.
“ go to my Father, and ye see me no
“ more; Of judgment, because the 11.
“ prince of this world is judged. I have 12.
“ yet many things to say unto you,
“ but ye cannot bear them now. How- 13.
“ beit, when the Spirit of truth is
“ come, he will guide you into all
“ truth: for he shall not speak of him-
“ self;

Mount of
Olives.

Joh. xvi. 14. " self; but whatsoever he shall hear, Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4
" that shall he speak: and he will shew
" you things to come. He shall glorifie

15. " me: for he shall receive of mine, and
" shall shew it unto you. All things that
" the Father hath are mine: therefore
" said I, that he shall take of mine, and
16. " shall shew it unto you. A little while,
" and ye shall not see me: and again a
" little while, and ye shall see me,
" because I go to the Father.

17. Then said some of his disciples among
themselves, *What is this that he saith*
unto us? A little while and ye shall not
see me; and again a little while, and
ye shall see me: and because I go to
18. the Father? They said therefore, *What*
is this that he saith, a little while? we
cannot tell what he saith.

19. Now Jesus knew that they were de-
sirous to ask him, and said unto them,
" Do ye inquire among your selves of
" that I said, A little while, and ye
" shall not see me: and again a little
20. while and ye shall see me? Verily,
" verily I say unto you, That ye shall
" weep and lament, but the world shall
" rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful,
" but your sorrow shall be turned into
21. joy. A woman when she is in tra-
vail, hath sorrow, because her hour
is come: but as soon as she is deliver'd
" of the child, she remembreth no more
" the anguish, for joy that a man is
22. " born into the world. And ye now
" therefore have sorrow: but I will see
" you

10 " you again, and your heart shall re-Mount of
 st. 33. " joice, and your joy no man taketh Olives.
 ist. 4. " from you. And in that day ye shall Joh. xvii
 " ask me nothing. Verily, verily I say 23.
 " unto you, whatsoever ye shall ask
 " the Father in my name, he will
 " give it you. Hitherto have ye asked 24.
 " nothing in my name: ask, and ye
 " shall receive, that your joy may be
 " full. These things have I spoken un- 25.
 " to you in proverbs: the time cometh
 " when I shall no more speak unto you in
 " proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly
 " of the Father. At that day ye shall 26.
 " ask in my name: and I say not unto
 " you, that I will pray the Father for
 " you; For the Father himself loveth 27.
 " you because ye have loved me, and
 " have believed that I came out from
 " God. I am come forth from the Fa- 28.
 " ther, and am come into the world:
 " again, I leave the world, and go to
 " the Father.

His disciples said unto him, *Lo, now 29
 speakest thou plainly, and speakest no
 proverb. Now are we sure that thou 30
 knowest all things, and needest not that
 any man should ask thee: this we
 believe that thou camest forth from God.*

Jesus answered them, " Do ye now 31:
 " believe? Behold the hour cometh, 32:
 " yea, is now come, that ye shall be
 " scattered, every man to his own,
 " and shall leave me alone: and yet I
 " am not alone, because the Father is
 " with me. These things I have spoken 33:

Mount of
Olives.

Joh. xvi.

“ unto you, that in me ye might have Anno
“ peace. In the world ye shall have *Ecc. 33*
“ tribulation: but be of good cheer, I *Minist. 4*
“ have overcome the world.

Joh. xvii.

1. These words spake Jesus, and lift up
his eyes to heaven, and said, “ Father,
“ the hour is come; glorifie thy son,
“ that thy son also may glorifie thee.
2. “ As thou hast given him power over
“ all flesh, that he should give eternal
“ life to as many as thou hast given
3. “ him. And this is life eternal, that
“ they might know thee the only true
“ God, and Jesus Christ whom thou
4. “ hast sent. I have glorified thee on
“ the earth: I have finished the work
5. “ which thou gavest me to do. And
“ now, O Father, glorifie thou me with
“ thine own self, with the glory which
“ I had with thee before the world was.
6. “ I have manifested thy name unto the
“ men which thou gavest me out of the
“ world: thine they were, and thou
“ gavest them me; and they have kept
7. “ thy word. Now they have known
“ that all things whatsoever thou hast
8. “ given me, are of thee. For I have
“ given unto them the words which
“ thou gavest me; and they have re-
“ ceived them, and have known surely
“ that I came out from thee, and they
“ have believed that thou didst send
9. “ me. I pray for them: I pray not for
“ the world, but for them which thou
“ hast given me, for they are thine.
10. “ And all mine are thine, and thine
“ are

no
at. 33.
list. 4.

“ are mine, and I am glorified in them. Mount of
“ And now I am no more in the world, Olives.
“ but these are in the world; and I 11. Joh. xvii.
“ come to thee. Holy Father, keep
“ through thine own name those whom
“ thou hast given me, that they may
“ be one as we are. While I was with 12.
“ them in the world, I kept them in
“ thy name: those that thou gavest me
“ I have kept, and none of them is
“ lost, but the son of perdition; that
“ the scripture might be fulfilled. And 13.
“ now come I to thee, and these things
“ I speak in the world, that they
“ might have my joy fulfilled in them-
“ selves. I have given them thy word; 14.
“ and the world hath hated them, be-
“ cause they are not of the world, even
“ as I am not of the world. I pray not 15.
“ that thou shouldest take them out of
“ the world, but that thou shouldest
“ keep them from the evil. They are 16.
“ not of the world, even as I am not
“ of the world. Sanctifie them through 17.
“ thy truth: thy word is truth. As 18.
“ thou hast sent me into the world,
“ even so have I also sent them into the
“ world. And for their sakes I sancti- 19.
“ fie my self, that they also might be
“ sanctified through the truth. Neither 20.
“ pray I for these alone, but for them
“ also which shall believe on me through
“ their word: That they all may be 21.
“ one; as thou Father art in me, and
“ I in thee; that they also may be one
“ in us: that the world may believe

Mount of
Olives.

Joh. xvii.

- “ that thou hast sent me. And the
 “ glory which thou gavest me, I have
 22. “ given them: that they may be one,
 23. “ even as we are one. I in them, and
 “ thou in me, that they may be made
 “ perfect in one, and that the world
 “ may know that thou hast sent me,
 “ and hast loved them, as thou hast
 24. “ loved me. Father, I will that they
 “ also whom thou hast given me, be
 “ with me where I am; that they may
 “ behold my glory which thou hast
 “ given me: for thou lovedst me be-
 “ fore the foundation of the world.
 25. “ O righteous Father, the world hath
 “ not known thee; but I have known
 “ thee, and these have known that thou
 26. “ hast sent me. And I have declared
 “ unto them, thy name, and will de-
 “ clare it: that the love wherewith
 “ thou hast loved me, may be in them,
 “ and I in them.

Anno
1212. 33
Minist. 4.

SECT.

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

S E C T. CXXXV.

Jesus passes over the Brook Cedron, and goes to the Garden of Gethsemane. He foretels his being seized that night, is in agony, he is seized by the guard, Judas being at the head of them. Peter cuts off the Ear of the High Priest's Servant, for which Jesus rebukes him, and heals the wound: He is carried before the High Priest. Peter thrice denies him.

WHEN Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred and his disciples. ^{1. Joh. xviii.} Then saith Jesus ^{31. Mar. xxvi.} unto them, "All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written [Zach. xiii. 7.] I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. But ^{32.} after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee. Peter answered and said unto him, ^{33.} Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended. * ^{30. Mar. xiv.} Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

- Garden. But he spake the more vehemently, *If Anno*
 Mar. xiv. 31. *I should die with thee, I will not deny* *Ætat. 33.*
thee in any wise. Likewise said they *Minist. 4.*
- Mat. xxvi. 36. all. * Then cometh Jesus with them *Mar. xiv.*
 unto a place call'd Gethsemane, and *32.*
 saith unto the disciples, *Sit ye here,* *Luk. xxii.*
while I go and pray yonder. * *Pray that* *40.*
- Luk. xxii. 40. *ye enter not into temptation.* * *And* *Mar. xiv.*
 Mat. xxvi. 37. *he took with him Peter, and the two* *33.*
- Mar. xiv. 33. *sons of Zebedee, * James and John,*
 * *and began to be sore amazed, and to* *Mar. xxvi.*
- Mat. xxvi. 38. *be very heavy. * Then saith he unto* *37.*
them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, *Mar. xiv.*
even unto death: tarry here, and watch *34.*
- Mar. xiv. 35. *with me. * And he went forward a* *Mar. xxvi.*
 Luk. xxii. 41. *little* * *about a stones cast, and kneeled* *39.*
- Mar. xiv. 35. *down, and prayed, * that if it were* *Luk. xxii.*
possible, the hour might pass from him. *41, 42.*
96. *And he said, Abba, Father, all things*
are possible unto thee; take away this
cup from me: nevertheless not what I
- Luk. xxii. 43. *will, but what thou wilt. * And there*
appeared an angel unto him from hea-
ven, strengthening him. And being in
an agony, he prayed more earnestly:
and his sweat was as it were great drops
of blood falling down to the ground.
45. * *And when he rose up from prayer,* *Mar. xxvi.*
and was come to his disciples, he found *40.*
- Mar. xiv. 37. *them sleeping for sorrow, * And saith* *Mar. xiv. 37.*
unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst *Mar. xxvi.*
38. *not thou watch one hour? Watch ye and* *40, 41.*
pray, lest ye enter into temptation; the *Luk. xxii.*
spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is *46.*
- Mat. xxvi. 42. *weak. * He went away again the se-* *Mar. xiv.*
cond time, and prayed, saying, O my *39.*
Father,

- Anno
Eccl. 33. Father, if this cup may not pass from Garden.
Minist. 4. me, except I drink it, thy will be done.
- * ^k And when he returned, he found 40. Mar. xiv.
43. them asleep (for their eyes were heavy):
neither wist they what to answer him.
* And he left them, and went away 44. Mat. xxvi.
again, and prayed the third time, say-
^l Mat. xxvi. ing the same words, * ^l And he cometh 41. Mar. xiv.
45. the third time, and saith unto them,
*Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is
enough, the hour is come; behold the
son of man is betrayed into the hands of*
^m Mar. xiv. *sinners.* * ^m Rise, let us be going: 46. Mat. xxvi.
42. *behold, he is at hand that doth betray
me.*
* And Judas also which betrayed him, 2. Joh. xviii.
knew the place: for Jesus oftentimes
resorted thither with his disciples. Ju- 3.
das then having received a band of men,
and officers from the chief Priests and
Pharisees, cometh thither with lanthorns
and torches, and weapons. * ⁿ And 43. Mar. xiv.
47, 48, 49. immediately while [*Jesus*] yet spake,
Luk. xxii. cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and
47. with him a great multitude, with swords
and staves, from the chief Priests, and
the Scribes, and the Elders. And he 44.
that betrayed him, had given them a
token, saying, *Whomsoever I shall kiss,
that same is he; take him, and lead him
away safely.* And as soon as he was 45.
* Mar. xiv. come he goeth straightway * ^o to Jesus, 49. Mat. xxvi.
45. and said, *Hail master,* and kissed him.
Luk. xxii. * ^p But Jesus said unto him, * *Friend,* 48. Luk. xxii.
47. *wherefore art thou come?* * *Judas, be-* 50. Mat. xxvi.
50. *trayest thou the son of man with a kiss?* 48. Luk. xxii.
* Jesus

Garden.

Joh. xviii.

* Jesus therefore knowing all things Anno ...

4. that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, *Whom seek ye?* Armo. 93. Minist. 4.5. They answered him, *Jesus of Nazareth.*Jesus saith unto them, *I am he.* And

Judás also which betrayed him, stood

6. with them. As soon then as he had

said unto them, *I am he,* they went

backward, and fell to the ground.

7. Then asked he them again, *Whom seek**ye?* And they said, *Jesus of Naza-*8. *reth.* Jesus answered, *I have told you**that I am he. If therefore ye seek me,*9. *let these go their way:* That the sayingmight be fulfilled which he spake, *Of**them which thou gavest me have I lost*12. *none.* ^a Then the band and the captain ^{Mat. xxvi.}and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and ^{50.}Luk. xxii. 49. bound him. * When they which were ^{Mar. xiv. 46.}

about him, saw what would follow,

they said unto him, *Lord, shall we smite*Joh. xviii. 10. *with the sword.* * ^a Then Simon Peter ^{Mat. xxvi.}Mat. xxvi. 51. having a sword, * stretched forth his ^{51.}hand, and drew his sword, and stroke ^{Mar. xiv. 47.}Joh. xviii. 10. a servant of the high Priest, * and cut ^{Luk. xxii.}off his right ear, the servants name was ^{50.}11. Malchus. ^b Then said Jesus unto Peter, ^{Joh. xviii.}Mat. xxvi. 52. *Put up thy sword into the sheath, * for* ^{10.} ^b ^{Mat. xxvi.}*all they that take the sword, shall perish* ^{52.}53. *with the sword. Thinkest thou that I* ^{Luk. xxii.}*cannot now pray to my Father, and he* ^{51.}*shall presently give me more than twelve*54. *legions of angels? But how then shall**the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it*Joh. xviii. 1. *must be.* * *The cup which my Father**hath*

Anno *baab given me; shall I not drink it?* Garden.
Ætat. 33. * And he touched his ear and healed ^{51.} Luk. xxii.
Minist. 4. him.

• Mat. xxvi. ' Then Jesus said unto the chief Priests ^{52.}
^{55.} and Captains of the temple, and the
Mar. xiv. Elders which were come to him, " Be
^{48.} " ye come out as against a thief, with
" swords and staves * for to take me? ^{55.} Mat. xxvi.
• Mar. xiv. " ' I sat daily with you teaching in the
^{49.} " temple, and ye laid no hold on me.
Luk. xxii. " * But this is your hour, and the ^{53.} Luk. xxii.
^{53.} " power of darkness. * • But all this ^{56.} Mat. xxvi.
• Mar. xiv. " was done, that the scriptures of the
^{49, 50.} " Prophets might be fulfilled.

Then all the disciples forsook him
and fled. * And there followed him a ^{51.} Mar. xiv.
certain young man, having a linen
cloth cast about his naked body; and
the young men laid hold on him. And ^{52.}
he left the linen cloth and fled from
them naked.

* And they led [*Jesus*] away to An- ^{13.} Joh. xviii.
nas first, (for he was father in law to Jerusalem.
Caiaphas, which was the high Priest
that same year.) Now Caiaphas was he ^{14.}
which gave counsel to the Jews, that it
was expedient that one man should die
for the people. (Now Annas had sent ^{24.}

• Mar. xiv. him bound unto Caiaphas the high Priest.)
^{53.} * • And they that had laid hold on Je- ^{57.} Mar. xxvi.
Luk. xlii. sus, led him away to Caiaphas the high
^{54.} Priest, * • and with him were assembled ^{53.} Mar. xiv.
• Mat. xxvi. all the chief Priests, and Elders, and
^{57.} the Scribes.
• Mat. xxvi.

^{58.} * • And Simon Peter followed Jesus { ^{15.} Joh. xviii.
Mar. xiv. ^{54.} * a far off, * and so did another disciple { ^{58.} Mat. xxvi.
Luk. xlii. that ^{15.} Joh. xviii.
^{54.}

- High Priest's that was known unto the high Priest, Anno
Palace. and went in with Jesus into the palace *Ætat. 33.*
John xviii. 16. of the high Priest. But Peter stood at *Minist. 4.*
the door without. Then went out that
other disciple which was known unto
the high Priest, and spake to her that
kept the door, and brought in Peter.
- Luk. xxii. 55. * ⁱ And when they had kindled a fire in ⁱ Mat. xxvi.
the midst of the hall, and were set ^{15.}
down together, Peter sat down among ^{Mar. xiv. 54.}
- Mat. xxvi. 58. them * to see the end.
- Mar. xiv. 66. * ² And as Peter was beneath in the ^{Mat. xxvi.}
palace, there cometh one of the maids ^{69.}
67. of the high Priest. ^b And when she saw ^b Luk. xxii.
Luk. xxii. 56. Peter warming himself, she * earnestly ^{56.}
John xviii. 17. looked upon him. * Then saith the
damsel that kept the door unto Peter,
Mar. xiv. 67. * ^c And thou also wast with Jesus of ^c Mat. xxvi.
68. Nazareth. But he denied, saying, I ^{69, 70.}
know not, neither understand I what thou ^{Luk. xxii.}
sayest, * I know him not. * And he ^{56, 57.}
Mar. xiv. 68. } went out into the porch; and the cock ^{Joh. xviii.}
Joh. xviii. 18. crew. * And the servants and officers
stood there, who had made a fire of
coals, (for it was cold) and they warm-
ed themselves: and Peter stood with
Mat. xxvi. 71. them, and warmed himself. * ^d And ^d Mar. xiv.
when he was gone out into the porch, ^{69.}
another maid saw him, and said unto ^{Luk. xxii.}
them that were there, *This fellow was* ^{59.}
also with Jesus of Nazareth. * And ^{Mar. xiv.}
Joh. xviii. 25. [as] Simon Peter stood and warmed ^{70.}
himself: they said unto him, *Art thou* ^{Luk. xxii.}
Mat. xxvi. 72. *also one of his disciples?* * ^e And again ^{58.}
he denied with an oath, *I do not know* ^{John xviii.}
Luk. xxii. 59. *the man.* * ^f And about the space of ^{73.}
one ^{Mat. xxvi.}
59. ^{Mar. xiv. 70.}
^{Luk. xxii.}

Anno one hour after * one of the servants of High Priest's
 Etat. 33. the high Priest (being his kinsman, Palace. 26. John xviii.
 Minist. 4. whose ear Peter had cut off) saith,
 * *Of a truth this fellow also was with* 59. Luke xxii.
him. * *Did not I see thee in the garden* 26. John xviii.
with him? * *for thou art a Galilean, and* 70. Mark xiv.
 b Mat. xxvi. *thy speech agreeth thereto.* b But he be- 71.
 74. gan to curse and to swear, saying, *I know*
 Luk. xxii. *not this man of whom ye speak.* * c And 60. Luke xxii.
 60. immediately while he yet spake the
 Joh. xviii. cock crew. And the Lord turned, and 61.
 27. looked upon Peter; c and Peter remem-
 Mar. xiv. 72. bred the word of the Lord, how he had
 c Mat. xxvi. 75. said unto him, *Before the cock crow*
 Mar. xiv. 72. * *twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.* 72. Mark xiv.
 Luk. xxii. 61. * And Peter went out, and wept bit- 62. Luke xxii.
 terly.
 * The high Priest then asked Jesus of 19. John xviii.
 his disciples, and of his doctrine. Je- 20.
 sus answered him, "I spake openly to
 "the world, I ever taught in the sy-
 "nagogue, and in the temple, whither
 "the Jews always resort, and in secret
 "have I said nothing. Why askest 21.
 "thou me? ask them which heard me,
 "what I have said unto them: behold,
 "they know what I said. And when 22. John xviii.
 he had thus spoken, one of the officers
 which stood by, stroke Jesus with the
 palm of his hand, saying, *Answerest*
thou the high Priest so? Jesus answer- 23.
 ed him, *If I have spoken evil, bear wit-*
ness of the evil; but if well, why smitest
thou me?
 d Mar. xiv. 55. * d Now the chief Priests and Elders, 59. Mat. xxvi.
 and all the council sought false witness
 against

High Priest's against Jesus to put him to death, But Anno
 Palace. found none: yea, though many false Eccl. 33.
 Mark xiv. 56. witnessess came. * For many bare false Ministr. 4
 witness against him, but their witness
 Mat. xxvi. 60. agreed not together. * ^b At the last ^b Mar. xiv.
 Mar. xiv. 57. } came * certain * two false witnessess, * and 57.
 Mat. xxvi. 60. } bare false witness against him, saying,
 Mar. xiv. 57. } we heard him say, *I will destroy this*
 58. *temple that is made with hands, and*
 59. *within three days I will build another*
made without hands. But neither so did
 their witness agree together.

S E C T. CXXXVI.

*The morning come, the chief Priests
 and Elders in council examine
 Jesus, who owns his being the
 Messiah, to the Sanhedrim.*

Luk. xxvi. 66. **A**ND as soon as it was day, the
 Elders of the people, and the
 chief Priests and the Scribes came to-
 gether, and led him into their council,
 Mar. xiv. 60. * ^a And the high Priest stood up in the * Mat. xxvi.
 midst, and asked Jesus, saying, An- 62, 63.
 61. *swereft thou nothing? what is it which*
these witnesss against thee? But he held
 his peace, and answered nothing. [*And*
 Luk. xxii. 67. *they went on examining*] * saying, *Art*
thou the Christ? tell us. And he said
 unto them, *If I tell you, you will not*
 68. *believe.* And if I also ask you, you will
 Mat. xxvi. 63. *not answer me, nor let me go.* * ^b And ^b Mat. xiv.
 the high Priest answered and said unto 62.
 him,

io him, I adjure thee by the living God, Before the
 r. 33. that thou tell us, ^e whether thou be the Council.
 tft. 4. Christ, the son of God. * ^d And Jesus { 62. Mar. xiv.
 k. xxii. said, I am: * Hereafter shall the son of { 69. Luk. xxii.
 it. xxvi. man sit on the right hand of the power
 of God. * And ye shall see the son of 62. Mar. xiv.
 man sitting on the right hand of power,
 and coming in the clouds of heaven.
 lar. xiv. * * Then the high Priest rent his clothes, 65. Mat. xxvi.
 saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; ^e what
 k. xxii. farther need have we of witnesses? * for 71. Luke xxii.
 we our selves have heard of his own
 ar. xiv. mouth; * * behold now ye have heard his 65. Mat. xxvi.
 blasphemy. What think ye? * And they 64. Mark xiv.
 all condemned him to be guilty of
 death.
 * And the men that held Jesus, mock- 63. Luk. xxii.
 ar. xiv. ed him, and smote him. * ^b Then did 67. Mat. xxii.
 they spit in his face, and buffeted him,
 and others smote him with the palms
 of their hands. * And when they had 64. Luk. xxii.
 blindfolded him, they stroke him on
 the face, and asked him, saying,
 uk. xxii. ^a Prophecy unto us, thou Christ, who is he
 that smote thee? And many other
 things blasphemously spake they against
 him.

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

S E C T. CXXXVII.

*The Jews carry Jesus before Pilate,
and demand sentence against him.
Pilate examines him, acquits him,
but at last through fear he con-
demns him, though against his will,
and sets Barabbas free.*

- Mar. xv. 1. ^c **A**ND straightway [it being yet] ^e Mar. xxvii
morning the chief Priests held a ^{i.}
consultation with the Elders and Scribes,
Mat. xxvii. 1. and the whole council * against Jesus
2. to put him to death. ^d And when they ^d Mark xv
Joh. xviii. 28. had bound him, they * led him away ^{i.}
Judgment Hall. from Caiaphas unto the hall of judg- ^{Luk. xxiii}
Mar. xxvii. 2. ment, * and delivered him to Pontius ^{i.}
Joh. xviii. 28. Pilate the governour. * And it was
early, and they themselves went not in-
to the judgment-hall, lest they should
be defiled; but that they might eat the
passover. Pilate then went out unto
Joh. xviii. 29. them, and said, *What accusation bring*
30. *you against this man.* They answered
and said unto him, *If he were not a*
malefactor, *we would not have delivered*
31. *him up unto thee.* Then said Pilate un-
to them, *Take ye him, and judge him*
according to your law. The Jews there-
fore said unto him, *It is not lawful for*
32. *us to put any man to death:* That the
saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which
he spake, signifying what death he
Luke xxiii. 2. should dye. * And they began to accuse
him,

o him, saying, *We found this fellow per- Judgment Hall.*
 t. 33. *verting the nation, and forbidding to*
 ist. 4. *give tribute to Caesar, saying that he*
himself is Christ a king. * And Jesus i 1. Mat. xxvii.
 u. xv. 2. stood before the governour, * and the
 xxiii. 3. governour asked him, saying, *Art thou*
the king of the Jews? And Jesus said
 unto him, * *Thou sayest it.*
 r. xv. 3. * ^b And when he was accused of the 2. Mar. xv.
 chief Priests and Elders * of many 12. Mat. xxvii.
 l. xxvii. things, * he answered nothing. * ^c And { 3. Mar. xv.
 Pilate asked him again, saying, *An- 12. Mat.
 swerest thou nothing? behold how many xxvii.
 things they witness against thee.* But { 4. Mar. xv.
 u. xv. 5. Jesus * ^d answered him to never a word, 14. Mat. xxvii.
 insomuch that the governour marvelled
 greatly.

* Then Pilate entred into the judg- 33. Joh. xviii.
 ment hall again, and called Jesus, and
 said unto him, *Art thou the king of the*
Jews? Jesus answered him, *Sayest thou 34.*
this thing of thy self, or did others tell
it thee of me? Pilate answered, *Am I 35.*
a Jew? *Thine own nation, and the*
chief Priests have delivered thee unto
me. What hast thou done? Jesus an- 36.
 swered, *My kingdom is not of this world:*
if my kingdom were of this world, then
would my servants fight, that I should
not be delivered to the Jews: but now is
my kingdom not from hence. Pilate 37.
 therefore said to him, *Art thou a king*
then? Jesus answered, *Thou sayest that*
I am a king. To this end was I born,
and for this cause came I into the world,
that I should bear witness to the truth.

- Judgment Hall. *Every one that is of the truth, heareth* Anno
 Mat. xxvii. 38. *my voice.* Pilate saith unto him, *What* Etat. 33.
is truth? And when he had said this, Minist. 4.
 he went out again to the Jews, and
 Luk. xxiii. 4. saith * * to the chief Priests, and to Joh. xviii.
 the people, *I find no fault in this man* 33.
 Joh. xviii. 38 } * *at all.* * And they were the more
 Luk. xxiii. 5. } fierce, saying, *he stirreth up the people,*
 Luk. xxiii. 5. *teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning*
from Galilee to this place.
 6. When Pilate heard of Galilee, he
 asked whether the man were a Galilean.
 7. And as soon as he knew that he be-
 longed unto Herod's jurisdiction, he
 sent him to Herod, who himself was
 8. also at Jerusalem at that time. And
 Before Herod. when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceed-
 ing glad: for he was desirous to see
 him of a long season, because he had
 heard many things of him; and he
 hoped to have seen some miracle done
 9. by him. Then he questioned with him
 in many words: but he answered him
 10. nothing. And the chief Priests and
 Scribes stood and vehemently accused
 11. him. And Herod with his men of war
 set him at nought, and mocked him,
 Before Pilate. and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and
 12. sent him again to Pilate. And the same
 day Pilate and Herod were made friends
 together; for before they were at en-
 13. mity between themselves. And Pilate
 when he had called together the chief
 Priests, and the rulers, and the people,
 Luk. xxiii. 14. said unto them, *Ye have brought this*
man unto me, as one that perverteth the
people:

people: and behold, I having examined him ^{Before Pilate;}
^{t. 33.} before you, have found no fault in this ^{Luk. xxliii}
^{ill. 4.} man touching those things whereof ye
accuse him; No, nor yet Herod: for I
sent you to him, and lo nothing worthy
of death is done unto him. I will there-
fore chastise him and release him. * But
ye have a custom that I should release un-
to you one at the passover.

^{ar. xv.} * Now at that feast the governour ^{15. Mar. xxvii}
^{xxiii.} was wont to release to the people a pri-
soner, whom they would. And they
had then a notable prisoner, called Ba-
rabbas, * which lay bound with them
that had made insurrection with him,
who had committed murder in the in-
surrection. And the multitude crying
aloud, began to desire him to do as he
had ever done unto them. * ^{17. Mat. xxvii}
^{ur. xv. 9.} ^{xviii.} There-
fore when they were gathered together,
Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye
that I release to you? Barabbas or Jesus,
which is called Christ * the king of the
^{ur. xxvii.} Jews? (For he knew that the chief
Priests had delivered him for envy)
* When he was set down on the judg-
ment seat, his wife sent to him, say-
ing, Have thou nothing to do with that
just man: for I have suffered many things
this day in a dream, because of him.

^{ur. xv. 11.} ^{19.} But the chief Priests and Elders per-
suaded the multitude, that they should
ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. * ^{20.} And
^{ch. xviii.} they cryed out all at once, saying, Away
with this man, and release unto us Ba-
rabbas: (who for a certain sedition made

- Before Pilate in the city, and for murder, was cast ^{Anno}
 Mar. xv. 12. in prison.) * And Pilate answered, ^{Ætat. 33,}
 Luk. xxiii. 20. and said again to them, * willing to re- ^{Minist. 4,}
 Mat. xxvii. 21. lease Jesus. * *Whether of the twain will* ^{Mat. xxvii.}
ye that I release to you? They said, Ba- ^{Luk. xxiii.}
 22. rabbas. Pilate saith unto them, *What* ^{20.}
shall I do then with Jesus, which is cal-
 Mar. xv. 12. *led Christ?* * *whom ye call the king of*
 Luk. xxiii. 21. *the Jews?* * But they cried, saying, ^{Mat. xxvii.}
 Mar. xv. 14. *Crucifie him, crucifie him.* * Then Pi- ^{22, 23.}
 late said unto them, the third time, ^{Mar. xv. 13,}
Why, what evil hath he done? I have ^{14.}
found no cause of death in him: I will
therefore chastise him, and let him go.
 Mat. xxvii. 23. * But they cried out the more, say- ^{Mar. xv}
 Luk. xxiii. 23. ing, *Let him be crucified:* * And the ^{14.}
 voices of them, and of the chief Priests ^{Luk. xxiii}
 prevailed. ^{23.}
- Joh. xix. 1. * Then Pilate therefore took Jesus;
 2. and scourged him, And the soldiers plat-
 ted a crown of thorns, and put it on
 his head, and they put on him a purple
 3. robe, And said, *Hail king of the Jews:*
 and they smote him with their hands.
 4. Pilate therefore went forth again, and
 saith unto them, *Behold, I bring him*
forth to you, that ye may know that I
find no fault in him.
 5. Then came Jesus forth, wearing the
 crown of thorns, and the purple robe.
 And Pilate saith unto them, *Behold the*
 6. *man.* When the chief Priests therefore
 and officers saw him, they cried out,
 saying, *Crucifie him, crucifie him.* Pi-
 late saith unto them, *Take ye him and*
crucifie him: for I find no fault in him.
 The

10 The Jews answered, *We have a law, Judgment Hall,*
 11. 33. *and by our Law he ought to dye, because 7.* Joh. xix.
 12. 4. *he made himself the son of God.* When 8,
 Pilate therefore heard that saying, he
 was the more afraid; And went again 9:
 into the judgment hall, and saith unto
 Jesus, *Whence art thou?* But Jesus 10,
 gave him no answer. Then saith Pilate un-
 to him, *Speakest thou not unto me? know-*
est thou not that I have power to crucifie
thee, and have power to release thee? Je- 11.
 sus answered, *Thou couldst have no power*
at all against me, except it were given thee
from above: therefore he that delivered me
unto thee hath the greater sin. And from 12.
 henceforth Pilate sought to release him:
 but the Jews cried out, saying, *If thou let*
this man go, thou art not Cesar's friend:
whosoever maketh himself a king, speak-
eth against Cesar. When Pilate there- 13.
 fore heard that saying, he brought Jesus
 forth, and sat down in the judgment
 seat, in a place that is called the
 pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha.
 And it was the preparation of the pas- 14.
 sover, and about the sixth hour: and
 he saith unto the Jews, *Behold your*
king. But they cried out, *Away with 15,*
him, away with him, crucifie him: Pi-
 late saith unto them, *Shall I crucifie*
your king? The chief Priests answer-
 ed, *We have no king but Cesar.*

* When Pilate saw that he could pre- 24. Mat. xxvii.
 vail nothing, but that rather a tumult
 was made, he took water, and washed
 his hands before the multitude, saying,

U 3

I am

Judgment-hall. *I am innocent of the blood of this just* Anno
 Joh. xix. 25. *person: see ye to it.* Then answered all ^{Ætat. 33.}
 the people, and said, *His blood be on* Minist. 4.
 Mar. xv. 15. *us, and on our children.* * And so Pi-
 Luk. xxiii. 24. late willing to content the people, * gave
 sentence that it should be as they re-
 Mat. xxvii. 26. quired. * * Then released he Barabbas ^{a Mar. xv.}
 Luk. xxiii. 25. unto them; * him that for sedition and ^{15.}
 murder was cast into prison, whom ^{Luk. xxiii,}
 Mar. xxvii. 26. they had desired. * ^b And when he ^{25.}
 had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to ^{Mar. xv. 15.}
 be crucified. ^c Then the soldiers of the ^{Luk. xxiii.}
 governour took Jesus into the common ^{25.}
 hall, * called (†) Pretorium; * and ga- ^{Joh. xix.}
 Mar. xv. 16. thered unto him the whole band of ^{16.}
 Mat. xxvii. 27. soldiers. And they stripped him, and ^{c Mar. xv.}
 28. put on him a scarlet robe. And when ^{16, 17, 18,}
 29. they had platted a crown of thorns, ^{19, 20.}
 they put it upon his head, and a reed
 in his right hand: and they bowed the
 knee before him, and mocked him,
 30. saying, *Hail king of the Jews.* And
 they spit upon him, and took the reed,
 31. and smote him on the head. And after
 that they had mocked him, they took
 the robe off from him, and put his
 own raiment on him, and led him a-
 way to crucifie him.

(†) *Pretorium* is the same with Judgment-hall
 abovementioned, the place where the Roman Go-
 vernours heard Causes, and gave Sentence.

Inno
Ecat. 33.
Inist. 4.

Temple.

SECT. CXXXVIII.

Judas hangs himself through despair.

THEN Judas which had betrayed ^{2. Mat. xxviii.} *[Jesus]* when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself; and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief Priests and Elders, saying, *I have* ^{4.} *sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood.* And they said, *What is it to us? See thou to that.* And he cast ^{5.} down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. ^{18.} * And falling headlong, he burst ^{Acts i.} asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. * And the chief Priests ^{6. Mat. xxvii.} took the silver pieces, and said, *It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.* ^{Acts i. 18.} * And they took counsel and bought ^{7.} with them the potter's field to bury ^{Acts i. 19.} strangers in. * ^{19.} And it was known un- ^{Acts i.} to all the dwellers at Jerusalem, inso- much as that field is called in their proper tongue, *Aceldama*, that is to say, *The field of blood.* ^{9. Mat. xxvii.} (* Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, *And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value: And gave them* ^{10.} *for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.*.)

Golgotha.

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

S E C T. CXXXIX.

Jesus is led out to the place of Execution. He is crucified between two Robbers, one of which repents, and Jesus promises him the enjoyment of Paradise. The words of Jesus while he hung on the Cross. His Death, and Miracles which preceded and followed it. The opinion of the Centurion and others concerning Jesus.

- Joh. xix. 17. **A**ND [*Jesus*] bearing his cross, went forth into a place called the place of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha. * * And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, * the father of Alexander and Rufus, * and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turning unto them, said, *Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children.*
- Luk. xxiii. 26. *For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.*
- Mar. xv. 21. *Then shall they begin to say to the mountains,*
- Luk. xxiii. 29. *32. Mat. xxvii. Mat. xv. 21.*

Anno 33. *tains, Fall on us; and to the hills, co-* Golgotha.
 Epat. 33. *ver us. For if they do these things in* 31. Luk. xxiii.
 Minist. 4. *a green tree, what shall be done in the*
dry? And there were also two other 32.
 malefactors led with him to be put to
 death. * And when they were come to the 33.
 place which is called Calvary [*or*] * Gol- 22. Mar. xv.
 gotha, which is being interpreted, The
 place of a Scull, * They gave him 34. Mat. xxvii.
 vinegar to drink, mingled with gall:
 and when he had tasted thereof, he
 would not drink: * there they crucifi- 33. Luk. xxiii.
 ed him. * Then the foldiers when they 23. Joh. xix.
 had crucified Jesus, took his garments
 (and made four parts, to every soldier
 a part) and also his coat: now the coat
 was without seam, woven from the top
 throughout. They said therefore a- 24.
 mong themselves, *Let us not rent it,*
but cast lots whose it shall be: that the
Scripture might be fulfilled, [Psal. xxii.
 9.] which saith, *They parted my rai-*
ment among them, and for my vesture
they did cast lots. These things there-
 fore the foldiers did. * And sitting 36. Mat. xxvii.
 down, they watched him there.
 * And Pilate wrote a title, and put 19. Joh. xix.
 it on the cross. And the writing was
 * in letters of Greek, and Latin, and 38. Luk. xxiii.
 Hebrew, THIS IS * JESUS OF NAZA- 19. Joh. xix.
 RETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.
 * And the Scripture was fulfilled, which 28. Mar. xv.
 saith, *And he was numbred with the*
transgressors. * This title then read 20. Joh. xix.
 many of the Jews: for the place where
 Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city.
 And

- Golgotha. And it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, Anno
 Joh. xix. 21. and Latin. Then said the chief Priests *Ætat. 33.*
 of the Jews to Pilate, *Write not, The* *Minist. 4.*
king of Jews; but that he said, *I am*
 22. *king of the Jews*. Pilate answered, *What*
I have written, I have written.
- Mark xv. 25. * And it was the (†) third hour, and
 Mat. xxvii. 38. they crucified him. *^b Then were there *Mar. xv.*
 two thieves crucified with him, one on *27.*
 the right hand, and another on the left. *Luk. xxiii.*
 Luk. xxiii. 34. * Then said Jesus, *Father, forgive them;* *33.*
 Mat. xxvii. 39. *for they know not what they do.* *^c And *Mar. xv.*
 they that passed by, reviled him, wag- *29, 30, 31.*
 40. ging their heads, And saying, *Thou that* *Luk. xxiii.*
destrovest the temple, and buildest it in *35.*
three days, save thy self: if thou be the
son of God, come down from the cross.
 41. Likewise also the chief Priests mock-
 ing him, with the Scribes and Elders,
 Luk. xxiii. 35. said, *^d *He saved others; let him save* *Mat. xxvii.*
himself, if he be Christ the chosen of *42.*
 Mar. xv. 32. *God: * Let Christ the king of Israel*
descend now from the cross, that we may
 Mat. xxvii. 43. *see and believe.* * *He trusted in God;*
let him deliver him now if he will have
him, for he said, I am the son of God.
 Luke xxiii. 36. * And the soldiers also mocked him,
 coming to him, and offering him vine-
 37. gar, And saying, *If thou be the king of*
the Jews, save thy self.
 39. * And one of the malefactors, which *Mar. xxvii.*
 were hanged, railed on him, saying, *If* *44.*
thou be Christ, save thy self and us. *Mar. xv. 32.*

(†) *Third hour, that is nine of the Clock in the Morning.*

But

no But the other answering, rebuked him, Golgotha.
 at. 33- saying, *Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou 40. Luk. xxiii.*
 nist. 4. *art in the same condemnation? And we 41.*
indeed justly; for we receive the due re-
ward of our deeds: but this man hath
done nothing amiss. And he said to Je- 42.
 sus, *Lord, remember me when thou comest*
into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto 43-
 him, *Verily, I say unto thee, To day*
shalt thou be with me in paradise.

* Now there stood by the cross of 25. Joh. xix.
 Jesus, his mother, and his mother's
 sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and
 Mary Magdalen. When Jesus there- 26.
 fore saw his mother, and the disciple
 standing by whom he loved, he saith
 unto his mother, *Woman, behold thy*
son. Then saith he to the disciple, *Be-* 27.
hold thy mother. And from that hour
 that disciple took her unto his own
 home.

lat. xxvii. * And when the (†) sixth hour was 33. Mar. xv.
 ik. xxiii. come, there was darkness over the
 lat. xxvii. whole land until the (||) ninth hour,
 6. * And the sun was darkened. *^b And 45. Luk. xxiii.
 about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a 34. Mar. xv;
 loud voice, saying, *Eloi, Eloi, lama sa-*
baſthani? which being interpreted is, *My*
God, my God why hast thou forsaken
me? * Some of them that stood there 47. Mat. xxvii;
 when they heard that, said, *This man*
calleth for Elias. * After this Jesus 28. Joh. xix.
 knowing that all things were now ac-

(†) Sixth hour, That is twelve of the Clock.

(||) Ninth hour, that is three in the Afternoon.
 completed,

- Golgotha. accomplished, that the scripture might ^{Anno.} be fulfilled, faith, *I thirst*. Now there ^{Æcat. 33.}
 Joh. xix. 29. ^{Minist. 4.} was set a vessel full of vinegar. * ^c And ^c Mar. xv.
 Mat. xxvii. 48. ^d straightway one of them ran ^d and took ^{36.}
 John xix. 29. a sponge, * ^e and put it upon hyssop, ^d Joh. xix.
 Mat. xxvii. 49. ^{29.} and put it to his mouth, * ^f The rest ^{Mat. xxvii.}
 John xix. 30. ^{48.} said, *Let be, let us see whether Elias* ^{Mar. xv.}
 will come to save him. * When Jesus ^{36.} therefore had received the vinegar,
 Mat. xxvii. 50. * ^g [And] when he had cried again with ^{Mar. xv.}
 Luk. xxiii. 46. ^{37.} a loud voice, * he said, *Father, into*
 John xix. 30. ^{Luk. xxiii.} thy hands I commend my soul. * ^{46.} It is ^{Mat. xxvii.}
 finished: and he bowed his head, and ^{50.} gave up the Ghost.
 Mat. xxvii. 51. * And behold the vail of the temple
 was rent in twain from the top to the
 52. bottom, and the earth did quake, and
 the rocks rent. And the graves were
 opened, and many bodies of saints which
 53. slept arose, And came out of the graves
 after his resurrection, and went into
 the holy city and appeared to many.
 54. ^h Now when the Centurion * which ^{Mar. xv.}
 Mar. xv. 39. stood over against him, * And they that ^{39.}
 Mat. xxvii. 54. were with him watching Jesus, * ^{Luk. xxiii.}
 Mar. xv. 39. saw ^{47.} that he so cried out, and gave up the
 Mat. xxvii. 54. Ghost, [and] * saw the earthquake,
 and those things that were done, they
 Luk. xxiii. 47. feared greatly, [and] * glorified God,
 saying, *Certainly this was a righteous*
 Mar. xv. 39. *man.* * ⁱ Truly this man was the son of ^{Mat. xxvii.}
 Luk. xxiii. 48. God. * And all the people that came ^{54.}
 together to that sight, beholding the
 things that were done, smote their
 49. breasts and returned. And all his ac-
 Mat. xxvii. 55. quaintance. * ^k And many women ^{Mar. xv.}
 were ^{40.}

10 were there (beholding afar off) *^d among Golgotha.
 it 33. whom was Mary Magdalen, and Mary 40. Mar. xv.
 ist. 4. the mother of James the lefs, and of
 x.xxvii. Joses, * and the mother of Zebedee's 56. Mat. xxvii.
 it.xxvii. children, * and Salome^c who also when 40. Mar. xv.
 he was in Galilee followed him, and 41.
 x.xliii. ministred unto him; and many other
 women which came up with him to
 Jerusalem.

S E C T. CXL.

The Burial of Jesus Christ.

THE Jews therefore, because it was 31. Joh. xix.
 the preparation, that the bodies
 should not remain upon the crosse on the
 sabbath day (for that sabbath day was
 a high day) besought Pilate that their
 legs might be broken, and that they
 might be taken away. Then came the 32.
 soldiers, and brake the legs of the first,
 and of the other which was crucified
 with him. But when they came to Je- 33.
 sus, and saw that he was dead already,
 they brake not his legs. But one of 34.
 the soldiers with a spear pierced his
 side, and forthwith there came out
 blood and water. And he that saw it, 35.
 bare record, and his record is true,
 that ye might believe. For these things 36.
 were done that the scripture should be
 fulfilled, [Psal. xxxiv. 21.] *A bone of*
him shall not be broken. And again ano- 37.
 ther scripture saith, *They shall look on*
him whom they pierced.

* And

- Golgotha. . . *^a And now when the even was come Anno
 Mar. xv. 42. (^b because it was the preparation, that Eccl. 33.
 Mat. xxvii. 57. is the day before the sabbath) *^c there Miss. 4.
 Luke xxiii. 51. came a rich man of Arimathea, * a city Mat. xxvii.
 Mark xv. 43. of the Jews, * an honourable counsel- 57.
 lor, which also waited for the kingdom Luk. xxiii.
 of God, * named Joseph, who also 54.
 Luke xxiii. 51. himself was Jesus's disciple. (* The Luk. xxiii.
 same had not consented to the counsel, 50.
 Joh. xix. 38. and deed of them) (* being a disci-
 ple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of
 Mar. xv. 43. the Jews) * boldly came, ^d and went Mat. xxvii.
 John xix. 38. unto Pilate, [^e and] * besought Pilate 58.
 that he might take away the body of Luk. xxiii.
 39. Jesus. And there came also Nicode- 52.
 mus (which at first came to Jesus by Mar. xv. 43.
 night) and brought a mixture of myrrh
 and aloes, about a hundred pound
 Mar. xv. 44. weight. * And Pilate marvelled if he
 were already dead: and calling unto
 him the Centurion, he asked him whe-
 45. ther he had been any while dead. And
 when he knew it of the Centurion,
 Mat. xxvii. 58. *^e Then Pilate commanded the body ^e Mar. xv.
 Mar. xv. 45. } to be delivered * to Joseph. * He came 45.
 Joh. xix. 38. } therefore and took the body of Jesus. Joh. xix. 38:
 Mat. xxvii. 59. *^f And when Joseph had taken the body, Mar. xv. 46.
 he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, Luk. xxiii.
 Joh. xix. 40. * with the spices, as the manner of the 53.
 41. Jews is to bury. Now in the place Joh. xix. 40.
 where he was crucified, there was a
 garden, ^g and in the garden a new se- ^g Mat. xxvii.
 Mat. xxvii. 60. pulchre, * which he had hewn out in the 60.
 Joh. xix. 42. rock. * There therefore, because of the Mar. xv. 46.
 Garden of the Sepulchre. Jew's preparation day, for the sepulchre Luk. xxiii.
 41. was nigh at hand, laid they Jesus where- 53.
 in

in was never man yet laid. * And he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. * * And Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of Joses, * which came with him from Galilee, * sitting over against the sepulchre, * and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid, and they returned, and prepared spices and ointment; and rested the sabbath day, according to the commandment.

S E C T. CXLI.

The chief among the Jews obtain a Guard of Roman Soldiers to secure the Sepulchre, which they seal up.

NOW the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief Priests and Pharisees, came together unto Pilate, saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as sure as you can. So they went and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

S E C T.

Garden of the
Sepulchre.

S E C T. CXLII.

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

On the Sunday early in the Morning the Women go to the Sepulchre, from whence they find the stone removed. They are informed by Angels that Jesus is restored to life, and risen again, with which they are commanded to acquaint his Apostles, who give no credit to it. Peter and John repair to the Sepulchre, which they find empty. Mary Magdalen sees two Angels again in the Tomb, and afterwards Jesus himself, with which she acquaints the Apostles, who do not regard her.

- Mar. xvi. 1. ^a **A**ND when the sabbath was past, ^a Mat.
 2. } very early in the morning, ^b as ^{xxviii. 1.}
 Mat. xxviii. 1. } it began to dawn towards the first day ^{Luk. xxiv. 1.}
 Mar. xvi. 2. of the week, came ^c Mary Magda- ^{Joh. xx. 1.}
 len, and Mary the mother of James, ^{2.}
 and Salome, [*who*] had bought sweet ^c Mat.
 spices, that they might come and a- ^{xxviii. 1.}
 noint him : they came to the sepulchre ^{Joh. xx.}
 Luk. xxiv. 1. at the rising of the sun, ^{*} bringing the
 spices which they had prepared, and
 Mar. xvi. 3. certain others with them. ^{*} And they
 said among themselves, *Who shall roll*
us away the stone from the door of the
 4. *sepulchre?* for it was very great. ^{*} And
 Mat. xxviii. 2. behold, there was a great earthquake ;
 for

10 for the angel of the Lord descended Garden of the
 at. 33. from heaven, and came and rolled back Sepulchre.
 11st. 4 the stone from the door, and sat upon
 uk. xxiy. it. (*^b And when they looked, they 4. Mat. xvi.
 1. xx. 1. saw that the stone was rolled away)
 * And they entred * into the sepulchre, 3. Luk. xxiv.
 * and found not the body of the Lord { 5. Mar. xvi.
 Jesus. And it came to pass as they { 3. Luk. xxiv.
 were much perplexed thereabout, be-
 hold two men stood by them in shin-
 ing garments. * They saw a young man 5. Mat. xvi.
 sitting on the right side, * His counte- 3. Mat. xxviii.
 lar. xvi. nance was like lightning, * and his rai-
 ment white as snow. And for fear of 4. Mat. xxviii.
 him the keepers did shake, and became
 as dead men. *^d And as [*the women*] 5. Luk. xxiv.
 were afraid, and bowed down their
 ar. xvi. 6. faces to the earth, *^c the angel answer- 5. Mat. xxviii.
 ed and said unto the women, Fear not :
 for I know that ye seek Jesus * of Na- 6. Mat. xv.
 at. xxviii. zareth, * which was crucified. *^a He is 6. Mat. xxviii.
 not here : for he is risen, as he said :
 lar. xvi. 6. come, see the place where the Lord lay.
 * Why seek ye the living among the 5. Luk. xxiv.
 dead ? He is not here, but is risen : 6.
 remember how he spake unto you, when
 he was yet in Galilee, saying, The son 7.
 of man must be delivered into the hands
 of sinful men, and be crucified, and the
 third day rise again. *^b And go quick- 7. Mat. xxviii.
 ly and tell his disciples, * and Peter * that { 7. Mar. xvi.
 he is risen from the dead, and behold he { 7. Mat.
 goeth before you into Galilee : there shall xxviii.
 ye see him, lo, I have told you. * And 8. Luk. xxiv.
 they remembered his words, * And they 8. Mat. xxviii.
 departed quickly from the sepulchre

- Garden of the with fear and great joy; * for they Anno
 Sepulchre. trembled and were amazed: neither Eccl. 33-
 Mar. xvi. 8. said they any thing to any man, for Minib. 4-
 Luk. xiv. 9. they were afraid, * and returned from Mar. xxviii. 8.
 the sepulchre, and told all these things
 unto the eleven, and to all the rest.
 10. It was Mary Magdalen and Joana, and
 Mary the mother of James, and other
 women that were with them, which
 told these things unto the Apo-
 stles. And their words seemed to them
 as idle tales, and they believed them
 not. * Then [Mary Magdalen] run-
 Joh. xx. 2. neth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and
 to the other disciple, whom Jesus lo-
 ved, and saith unto them, *They have*
taken away the Lord out of the sepul-
chre, and we know not where they have
 3. *laid him.* * Peter therefore went forth, * Luk xxiv.
 and that other disciple, and came to 12.
 4. the sepulchre. So they ran both toge-
 ther: and the other disciple did out-
 run Peter, and came first to the sepul-
 5. chre. And he stooping down, and look-
 ing in, saw the linen clothes lying by
 Luk. xxiv. 12. * themselves; * yet went he not in. Then
 Joh. xx. 6. } cometh Simon Peter following him,
 and went into the sepulchre, and seeth
 7. the linen clothes lie; And the napkin
 that was about his head, not lying
 with the linen clothes, but wrapped
 8. together in a place by it self. Then
 went in also that other disciple, which
 came first to the sepulchre, and he saw,
 10. and believed. For as yet they knew
 not the scripture, that he must rise again
 from

120^o from the dead. Then the disciples went away again unto their own home. Garden of the Sepulchre.
 126. §3. * Wondering at that which was come to pass. * But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre, And seeth two 10. Joh. xx.
12. Luk. xxiv.
11. Joh. xx.
 angels in white, sitting the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain: And they 12.
 say unto her, *Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.* And when 13.
 she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith unto 14.
 her, *Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou?* She supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, *Sir, if thou hast born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.* Jesus saith unto her, *Mary, she* 15.
turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master, Je- 16.
 sus saith unto her, *Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father, and to my God, and your God.* Mary 17.
 Magdalen came and told that disciple, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

Garden of the
Sepulchre.

Anno
Ætat. 33.
Minist. 4.

S E C T. CXLIII.

Mary Magdalen tells the Apostles that she had seen Jesus, but they give no credit to her. Jesus appears a second time to several women.

- Mar. xvi. 9. **N**OW when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalen, out of
10. whom he had cast seven devils. And she went and told them, that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.
11. And they when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her,
Mat. xxviii. 9. believed not. * And as [*the other women*] went to tell his disciples, behold Jesus met them, saying, *All hail.* And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then said Jesus unto them, *Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.*
11. Now when they were going, behold some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief Priests all
12. the things that were done. And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the foldiers, saying,
13. *Say ye, His disciples came by night and*
14. *stole him away, while we slept. And if this comes to the governours ears, we*
15. *will persuade him, and secure you.* So they

Anno they took the money, and did as they Garden of the
Ætæ. 33. were taught: and this saying is com- Sepulchre.
Minist. 4. monly reported among the Jews until Mat. xxviii.
this day.

S E C T. CXLIV.

Jesus appears to Peter, and a fourth time is seen by two Disciples, as they were going to Emmaus. He appears fifthly to the Eleven Apostles, whom he upbraids for their Infidelity, and gives them several Instructions as to the publishing the Gospel.

Luk. xix.
13.

HE [*i. e.* *Jesus*] was seen of Ce. 5. 1 Cor. xv.
phas. * After that, unto two 12. Mar. xvi,
of them, as they walked * that same 13. Luk. xxiv.
day to a village called Emmaus, which In the way to
was from Jerusalem about threescore Emmaus.
furlongs, And they talked together of 14.
all these things which had happened.
And it came to pass that while they 15.
communed together, and reasoned, Je-
sus himself drew near [and] * he ap- 12. Mar. xvi.
peared in another form and went into
the country * with them. But their { 15. Luk. xxiv
eyes were holden, that they should not { 16.
know him. And he said unto them, 17.
*What manner of communications are these
that ye have one to another, as ye walk
and are sad?* And the one of them, 18.
whose name was Cleopas, answering,

In the way to
Emmaus.
Luk. xxiv.

18. said unto them, *Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?* And he said unto them,
19. *What things?* And they said unto him, *Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people: And how the chief Priests and Rulers delivered him to be condemned to death,*
20. *and have crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and besides all this, to day is the third day since these things were done. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre: And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was also alive.*
21. *And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said; but him they saw not. Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?* And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning
22. himself. And they drew nigh unto the village whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone
23. farther. But they constrained him, saying, *Abide with us, for it is towards evening*

Anno
Emm. 32.
Minist. 4.

Anno *evening, and the day is far spent.* And In the way to
 Ætat. 33. he went in to tarry with them. And Emmaus.
 Ministr. 4. it came to pass, as he sat at meat with 30. Luk. xxiv.
 them, he took bread, and blessed it,
 and brake, and gave to them. And 31.
 their eyes were opened, and they knew
 him, and he vanished out of their sight.
 And they said one to another, *Did not* 32.
our heart burn within us, while he talk-
ed with us by the way, and while he
opened to us the scriptures? * And they 33.
 rose up the same hour, and returned to
 Jerusalem, and found the eleven ga- Jerusalem.
 thered together, and them that were
 with them, saying, *The Lord is risen* 34.
indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.
 And they told what things were done 35.
 in the way, and how he was known of
 them in breaking of bread, * neither 13. Mar. xvi,
 believed they them. * Then the same 19. Joh. xx.
 day at evening, being the first day of
 the week, when the doors were shut,
 where the disciples were assembled for
 fear of the Jews, came Jesus. *^b After 14. Mat. xvi,
 ward he appeared unto the eleven as
 they sat at meat. * And as they thus 36. Luk. xxiv.
 spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst
 of them, and saith unto them, *Peace*
be unto you. * And upbraided them 14. Mar. xvi.
 with their unbelief, and hardness of
 heart, because they believed not them
 which had seen him after he was risen.
 * But they were terrified and affrighted, 37. Luk. xxiv.
 and supposed that they had seen a spi-
 rit. And he said unto them, *Why are* 38.
ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise

- Jerusalem. *in your hearts? Behold my hands and* Anno
 Joh. xx. 39. *my feet, that it is my self: handle me,* Act. 33.
and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and Minist. 4.
 40. *bones, as ye see me have.* And when
 he had thus spoken, he shewed them
 Joh. xx. 20. *his hands, and his feet, *and his side.*
 Then were the disciples glad, when
 Luk. xxiv. 41. *they saw the Lord. * And while they*
yet believed not for joy, and wondred,
he said unto them, Have ye here any
 42. *meat?* And they gave him a piece of a Joh. xx.
 43. *broil'd fish, and of a hony comb. And* 20.
he took it and did eat before them.
 44. *And he said unto them, These are the*
words which I spake unto you while I
was yet with you, that all things must
*be fulfilled which were written *in the*
law of Moses, and in the Prophets,
and in the Psalms concerning me.
 45. *Then he opened their understanding,*
that they might understand the scrip-
 46. *tures, And said unto them, Thus*
it is written, and thus it behoved
 47. *Christ to suffer, and to rise from the*
dead the third day. And that, repent-
ance and remission of sins should be
preached in his name among all nations,
 48. *beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are wit-*
 49. *nesses of these things. And behold*

(*) The Jews divided the old Testament into three parts, the Books of Moses, which they called the Law. The Prophets. And under the Psalms they comprehended the Psalms of David, the writings of Solomon, and Job, which are commonly called the Hagiographa, that is holy Writings.

send

ino. *send the promise of my Father upon you : Jerusalem.*
 tat. 33. *but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, Joh. xx.*
 mist. 4. *till ye be endued with power from on high.*
 * Then said Jesus to them again, *Peace* 21. *Joh. xx.*
be unto you ; as my Father hath sent me,
*even so I send you. * And he said unto* 15. *Mat xvi,*
them, " Go ye into all the world, and
" preach the Gospel to every creature.
" He that believeth and is baptized, 16.
" shall be saved ; but he that believeth
" not, shall be damned. And these signs 17.
" shall follow them that believe ; in
" my name shall they cast out devils,
" and shall speak with new tongues.
" They shall take up serpents, and if 18.
" they drink any deadly thing, it shall
" not hurt them ; they shall lay hands
" on the sick, and they shall recover.
 * And when he had said this, he breath- 22. *Joh. xx,*
 ed on them, and said unto them, *Re-*
 ceive ye the Holy Ghost. *Whosoever sins* 23.
ye remit, they are remitted unto them ;
and whosoever sins ye retain, they are
retained. But Thomas one of the twelve 24.
 called Didymus, was not with them
 when Jesus came. The other disciples 25,
 therefore said unto him, *We have seen*
the Lord. But he said unto them, Ex-
cept I shall see in his hands the print of
the nails, and put my finger into the
print of the nails, and thrust my hand
into his side, I will not believe.

Galilee.

Anno. 11.
Æt. 33.
Minist. 4.

S E C T. CXLV.

Jesus is seen the sixth time by the eleven Apostles. Herebukes Thomas for his obstinacy.

Mat. xxvii. 16.

Joh. xx. 26.

THEN the eleven disciples went away into Galilee. * And after eight days, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, *Peace be*
 27. *unto you.* Then saith he to Thomas, *Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands: and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faith-*
 28. *less but believing.* And Thomas answered and said unto him, *My Lord and*
 29. *my God.* Jesus saith unto him, *Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.*

S E C T. CXLVI.

Jesus appears a seventh time to some of his Disciples at the Lake of Tiberias, and foretels what shall befall Peter and John.

Joh. xx.

1.

AFTER these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he himself. There were together
 2. *Simon*

no. 33. Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didy Galilee.
 mat. 33. mus, and Nathaniel of Cana in Galilee, Joh. xxi.
 list. 4. the sons of Zebedee, and two other of
 his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto 3.
 them, *I go a fishing.* They say unto
 him, *We also go with thee.* They went
 forth, and entered into a ship immediately ; and that night they caught nothing.
 But when the morning was now come, 4.
 Jesus stood on the shore ; but the disci-
 ples knew not that it was Jesus. Then 5.
 Jesus saith unto them, *Children, have*
ye any meat? They answered him, *No.*
 And he saith unto them, *Cast the net* 6.
on the right side of the ship, and ye shall
find. They cast therefore, and now
 they were not able to draw it for the
 multitude of fishes. Therefore that 7.
 disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto
 Peter, *It is the Lord.* Now when Si-
 mon Peter heard that it was the Lord,
 he girt his fishers coat unto him, (for
 he was naked) and did cast himself into
 the sea. And the other disciples came 8.
 in a little ship (for they were not far
 from land, but as it were two hundred
 cubits) dragging the net with fishes.
 As soon then as they were come to 9.
 land, they saw a fire of coals there, and
 fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith 10.
 unto them, *Bring of the fish which ye*
have now caught. Simon Peter went 11.
 up, and drew the net to the land full
 of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and
 three : and for all there were so many,
 yet was not the net broken. Jesus saith 12.
 unto

- Sea of Tiberias. them, *Come and dine.* And none of the Anno. Joh. xxi. disciples durst ask him, *Who art thou?* Mat. 23. Mist. 4.
13. knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus then cometh and taketh the bread, and
14. giveth them, and fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.
15. So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these?* He saith unto him, *Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee.* He saith unto him, *Feed*
16. *my Lambs.* He saith unto him again a second time, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?* He saith unto him, *Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee.* He saith
17. unto him, *Feed my sheep.* He saith unto him the third time, *Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?* Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, *Lovest thou me?* and he said unto him, *Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee.* Jesus
18. saith unto him, *Feed my sheep.* “ Verily, verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thy self, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.
19. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto
20. him, *Follow me.* Then Peter turning about,

about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus ^{Sea of Tiberias.}
 loved, following; which also leaned ^{Joh. xxi.}
 on his breast at supper, and said, *Lord,*
which is he that betrayeth thee? Peter ^{21.}
 seeing him, saith to Jesus, *Lord, and*
what shall this man do? Jesus saith unto ^{22.}
 him, *If I will that he tarry till I come,*
what is that to thee? Follow thou me.
 They went this saying abroad among ^{23.}
 the brethren, that that disciple should
 not die: yet Jesus said not unto him,
 He shall not die; but, *If I will that he*
tarry till I come, what is that to thee?
 This is the disciple which testifieth of ^{24.}
 these things, and wrote these things:
 and we know that his testimony is true.

S E C T. CXLVII.

*Jesus is seen the eighth time to the
 eleven Apostles, upon a Mountain:
 instructs them in divers particu-
 lars concerning their Ministry.*

[**T**hen the eleven disciples went] into ^{16. Mat. xxviii.}
 a mountain where Jesus had ap-
 pointed them. And when they saw ^{17.}
 him, they worshipped him: but some
 doubted. And Jesus came and spake to ^{18.}
 them, saying, *All power is given unto*
me in heaven, and in earth. Go ye ^{19.}
therefore and teach all nations, baptizing
them in the name of the Father, and of
the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Teach- ^{20.}
ing them to observe all things whatso-
ever

Anno ever I have commanded you : and lo I At the Sea
 Ætat. 33. am with you always even to the end of Tiberias
 Minist. 4. the world. Amen.

S E C T. CXLVIII.

Jesus is seen the ninth time by five hundred Disciples ; the tenth by James ; the eleventh by all the Apostles ; a twelfth and last time by the same, whom he again commissions to publish the Gospel, and instructs in several things relating to it, and afterwards in their sight ascends up into Heaven. The Conclusion.

After that [*Jesus*] was seen of 2-6. 1 Cor. xv
 above five hundred brethren at once : of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. After that he was seen of 7.
 James, then of all the Apostles. * To 3. Acts i
 whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God : And being assembled 4.
 together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, *Ye have heard of me. For John truly baptized with water,*

o. 33. water, but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost, not many days hence. When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? And he said unto them, 7. It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. But ye shall receive power 8. after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost parts of the earth. At the sea of Tiberias. 6. Acts i.

* And he led them out as far as to Bethany. Bethany: and he lift up his hands, and 50. Luk. xxvi. blessed them. * And it came to pass, 51. while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. * And when he had spoken these things 9. Acts i. while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight, * and sat on the right hand of 19. Mar. xvi. God.

* And while they looked stedfastly 10. Acts i. toward heaven, as he went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel; which also said, Ye men of Galilee, 11. why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. * And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: 25. Luk. xxiv. * from the mount called Olivet, which 12. Acts i. is

Mount Olivet. is from Jerusalem, a (†) sabbath days journey. * And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Anno Ætat. 33. Minist. 4.

Acts i. 12. * And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. * And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ the son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. *Amen.*

Mar. xvi. 20. Joh. xx. 30. Joh. xx. 31. Joh. xxi. 25.

The End of the Fourth year of Christ's Ministry.

(†) *Sabbath days journey*, That is two Miles, for it was not lawful for the Jews to go more on the Sabbath day.

F I N I S.







